FLORUS ANGLICUS

Or an exact

HISTORY

OF

England,

FROM THE

REIGN

OF

William the Conquerour

to the happy Restoration of

K. CHARLES the II.

By *Lambert Wood*, Gent.

The Fourth Edition.

Illustrated with the Lively Effigies of all the Kings and Queens since the Conquest.

LONDON,

Printed for *Simon Miller* at the Star in St. *Paul's* Church-Yard, 1662.

HISTORY
OF
England,

BODL. LIBR.
25 JUL 1918
OXFORD

TO THE READER.

FRIENDLY READER,

Thou hast here a short Compendium of the Affairs of England, *yet written with so much Care and Diligence, that there is nothing almost that is wanting in it, but circumstances, or things not usefull. By this means, I suppose, I have spared the*

Reader both labour and time. For, what will it profit a man to ſpend his Age in ſearching out of that, which he may have repreſented to him at an inſtant? You may with one glance of your Eye runne over all the VVritings and Pains taken by many Authours. And that nothing might be wanting, I have drawn forth the Hiſtory *from the very* Infancy *of it, even unto the Death of* CHARLES *the Firſt, not following my own Advice, but directed by the Teſtimony of them, who,*

who, ſetting aſide all Envy, were Reall and Eye-witneſſes of this Tragedy. I have offered no Violence to the Truth, by ſiding with any part. If I loved the one, I did not hate the other. And if perhaps any Man (which in Novelties is much deſired) by his future Experience, ſhall bring forth the hidden Cauſes of things to the clearer Light, I will not refuſe to give Credit to it, ſo farre is it from me from believing my own Report before the Relation of other Men. That

which pleased me, I think shall not be distastefull unto thee. And I hope to reap the fruit of my Labours in it, your kinde Acceptance, which if I may obtain, I aim at nothing else. Judge moderately of the Style, and censure it courteously. It will not cause your Admiration shining forth in a Scholastick Brightnesse, it will not retard curious Eyes with the Elegancie of words, and glorying in the wittie choise of Sentences. What can I say more? it must be excused. The desire of Praise

could

could not carry me aloft, who want VVings for it. Moderate things pleaſe me, when I can reach no higher. Only I abhorre the envy of Detractors, and the quarrelling of carping Momus. *Having premiſed thus much, I ſhall remain*

A true Friend to my Country,

Lambert Wood.

could not carry me aleft, who want Wings for it. Moderate things please me, when I can reach no higher. Only I abhorre the envy of Detractors, and the quarrelling of carping Momus. Having premised thus much, I shall remain

Atrue Friend to my Country,

Courteous Reader, These Books following are printed for, or sold by Simon Miller *at the Star in St Pauls Church-yard.*

In Folio.

THe Civil Warres of *Spain*, in the Reign of *Charls* the 5th Emperor of *Germany*, and King of that Nation, wherein our late unhappy differences are paralleld in many particulars.

A general Hiſtory of *Scotland*, from the year 767, to the death of King *James*.

The Hiſtory of this Iron Age.

Dr. *Lightfoot* his Harmony of the N. Teſtam.

In large Quarto.

John Barckley his Argenis, Tranſlated by his late Majeſties ſpecial command. The Proſe by Sir *Robert le Griſe*, The Poſie by *Tho. May*.

In Quarto.

The Harmonious conſent and Confeſſions of Faith, of all the Proteſtant Reformed Churches, profeſſed in all the Kingdoms, Nations and Provinces of *Europe*, publiſhed with Authority, to prevent the ſpreading of Errors and Hereſies.

Camdens Remains concerning *Britain*, with many choice Additions, by *W. D.* Gent.

Chriſt tempted, the devil Conquered, being an Ex-

Exposition on part of the fourth Chap. of St. *Mathews* Gospel, by *John Gumbledon* Rector of *Coyly* in *Glamorgan*.

Abrahams faith, or the good old Religion, proving the Doctrine of the Church of *England*, to be the only true faith of Gods Elect: By *J. Nicholson* Minister of the Gospel.

The Anatomy of Mortality: by *George Stroad*.

Aynsworth on the *Canticles*.

Paul Bayne, his *Diocesans* Trial.

The Supream Power of Christian States and Magistracy, vindicated from the insolent pretences of *Gulielmus Apolonius*: By *E Gralle*.

A Treatise of Civil Policy; being a clear decision of 43 queries, concerning prerogative right and priviledge in reference to the supreme Prince and the people: By *Samuel Rutherford* Professor of Divinity of Saint *Andrews* in *Scotland*.

Politick and Military observations of Civil and Military Government, containing the birth, increase, decay of Monarchies, the carriage of Princes and Magistrates.

Mr. *Pinchin* his meritorious price of mans Redemption cleared.

Astrology Theologized, shewing what nature and influence the Stars and Planets have over men, and how the same may be diverted and avoided.

Large Octavo.

The Reconciler of the Bible, wherein above 2000 seeming contradictions are fully & plainly reconciled.

A view of the Jewish Religion, with their Rites, Customes, and Ceremonies.

The History of *England*, Illustrated with the Lively

Lively Effigies of all the Kings and Queens since the Conquest.

Small Octavo.

Ed. Waterhouse Esq; his Discourse of piety and charity.

A view and defence of the Reformation of the Church of *England*, very usefull in these times.

Mr. *Peter du Moulin*, his Antidote against Popery; published on purpose to prevent the delusions of the Priests and Jesuits, who are now very busie amongst us.

Herberts Devotions, or a Companion for a Christian, containing Meditations and prayers, usefull upon all occasions.

Mr. *Knowles* his Rudiment of the Hebrew Tongue.

A Book of scheams or figures of heaven, ready set for every four minuits of times, and very usefull for all Astrologers.

Florus Anglicus, or an exact History of *England* from the reign of *William* the Conqueror, to the death of the late King.

The King of *Spains* Cabinet Counsel divulged, or a Discovery of the Prevarications of the *Spaniards*, with all the Princes and States of *Europe*, for obtaining the *Universall Monarchy*.

Lingua, or the Combat of the Tongue and the five Senses for Superiority: a serious Comedy.

The Spirits Touchstone; being a clear discovery how a man may certainly know whether he be truly taught by the Spirit of God or not.

The Poor mans Physician and Chirurgeon.

Duodecim.

Doctor *Smiths* Practice of Physick.

The Grammer War.

Poselius Apothegms.

Faciculus

Faciculus Florum.
Crashaws Visions.
Drexelius School of Patience.
Helvicus Colloquies.
The Christian Souldier his combat with the three arch enemies of mankinde, the world, the flesh, and the devil.

In 24.

The New Testament.
The third part of the Bible.

THE

THE CONTENTS.

Chap. 1. Of the Normans before the Conquest.
2. Of the Reign of William the Conqueror.
3. Of William the Second.
4. Henry the First.
5. Stephen King of England.
6. Henry the Second.
7. Richard the First.
8. John.
9. Henry the Third.
10. Edward the First.
11. Edward the Second.
12. Edward the Third.
13. Richard the Second.
14. Henry the Fourth.
15. Henry the Fifth.
16. Henry the Sixth.
17. Edward the Fourth.
18. Edward the Fifth, and Richard the Third.
19. Henry the Seventh.
20. Henry the Eighth.
21. Queen Mary.
22. Queen Elizabeth.
23. King James the First.

THE CONTENTS.

Concerning the first Kings of the Britans.	1
Of the first Norman *King.*	8
William the Second.	14
Henry the First.	19
Stephen King of *England.*	24
Henry the Second.	31
Richard the First.	36
John the First.	43
Henry the Third.	51
Edward the First.	62
Edward the Second.	69
Edward the Third.	82
Richard the Second.	95
Henry the Fourth.	108
Henry the Fifth.	115
Henry the Sixth.	123
Edward the Fourth.	139
Edward the Fifth, and *Richard* the Third.	151
Henry the Seventh.	161
Henry the Eighth.	170
Edward the Sixth.	186
Queen *Mary.*	192
Queen *Elizabeth.*	199
King *James.*	207
King CHARLES the First.	213

AN

AN EXACT HISTORY OF England.

Concerning the first Kings of the Britans.

BRitany of old, was subject, not to one, but to divers Kings. The Names of four of them are called by *Cæsar*, *Cingetorix*, *Carvilius*, *Taximagulus*, and *Segonax*; whereupon the Conquest of the *Romans* over them was more sure, though it were longer in doing; for whilst they sought all severally, they are generally overcome: Yet the *Britans* did ever now and then make some resistance, hardly submitting their necks to anothers Government: Amongst whom, for her Noble enterprize, *Vaodicia* the Queen was most remarkable; who with her two Daughters, Virgins, having formerly been forced by the

Roman Souldiery, in revenge for her Chastity abused, raised a mighty Army, and overthrew the Enemy with a great slaughter; yet the fortune of the Warre changing afterwards, she escaped bondage provided for her, by drinking poison. This *Island* was subject to the *Roman* Government five hundred years: but discord creeping in at home, they left this place of their own accord, which they had won with so much labour; yet they took such *Britans* along with them, which they thought most fit for Warre, part whereof were slain in the Warre, part were consumed with hunger and want, and part of them transported themselves into that place in *France* for their safety, which from them is called *Britany*.

The *Picts* and *Scots*, they strive to enter upon the Countrey thus forsaken; whom to resist, they chose *Vortigernus* Earl of *Cornwall* for their King, and implored the help of the *Saxons* or *Angle-Saxons*, a Warlike Nation in *Germany*, who were promiscuously called by that Name: These with *Hengist* and *Horsus* their Leaders, made haste into *England* with an Army of nine thousand men; by whose valor, the *Scotch* and *Picts* were overcome in a pitched Battel. From hence arose so great an opinion of the *Saxons*, that they were held for Angels, as it were, sent from heaven; and they were received into society, by granting part of this Island unto them.

Also *Vortigernus* being taken with the beauty of *Rovena*, the Daughter of *Hengist*, easily obtained her for his Wife. *Hengist*, not a little elevated by this Success, forgetting his own

Countrey,

Countrey, ſuppoſed himſelf to be King of *Britany*; calling therefore not a few of his Countreymen out of *Saxony*, he attempted to gain the Land by force. But the Nobility of the Land foreſeeing theſe undertakings, they thruſt *Vortigernus*, an Uxorious King, from his Throne, and they create his Son *Vortimer* King. He ſuddenly picking up vvhat Souldiers he could, went againſt the Enemy, near *Alesfort*, vvhere in a ſingle fight, on one ſide *Caligarnus* Brother of *Vortimer*, on the other ſide *Herſus* Brother to *Hengiſt* vvere ſlain. The *Saxons* were compelled to forſake all *Britany*, or elſe a Territory vvas granted to them in *Tennet*, where they found no quiet. *Vortimer*, to whom *Britany* now vvas indebted for her liberty, having reigned four years, vvas poyſoned by *Rovena* the Wife of *Vortigernus*; and the Nobility are perſwaded by a crafty woman, to recal their former King *Vortigernus*. This being done, *Hengiſt* growing more bold by the favour of his Son in Law, levies a new Army, and again attempts to invade *Britany*, cunningly pretending that he came not to wage Warre with the *Britans*, but to fetch *Rovena*, and to make a continual League with them. The falſe Name of League diſpleaſed not, the *Britans* came unarmed to the place appointed, but the *Saxons* came armed with ſhort skeens under their garments; by this fraud theſe unprepared people were overcome without great conteſt, three hundred of the Nobility were ſlain, the King himſelf was taken, and obtained his liberty by the Provinces of *Kent*, *Suffolk*, *Suſſex*, and *Norfolk*, but he himſelf fled into *Wales*. In the mean while

an infinite number of *Saxons* arrived in *Britany*, and they overflow the whole Island like a sudden Deluge: untill such time as *Aurelius Ambrosius*, a *Roman* born, yet very affectionate to the *Britans*, landed in *Britany* with a great multitude of people; and at first, he sets upon King *Vortigernus* suddenly, who was doubtless the cause of all these troubles; and besieging him in a certain Castle, he put fire to it, and consumed him with the Fort. After this he holds the *Saxons* play enough, not in one Battel alone; but at length he is miserably destroyed by a *Saxon*, that was suborned to give him poison to drink, when he had been Ruler over the affairs of *Britany* thirty two years.

Uter succeeded him in the Kingdom, or as some will have it, *Pendragon* the *Britan*, so called, because he was wont to wear the Dragons Head of Gold in his Banner, which is at this day an Ensign of Honour to the *English*. He also overthrew the pride of the *Saxons* in divers Battels, untill the eighteenth year of his Reign, poyson being cast into a Well (the water whereof he daily drank of) he was killed also.

Arthur succeeded him, who was born of a fair and Noble Woman, which was Wife to the Duke of *Cornwall*. This *Arthur* being of wonderfull force, killed eight hundred *Saxons* with his own hand, and did many other admirable things; he also set up the Order of the Round Table, but afterwards being wounded in Battell, he died in the twenty sixth year of his Reign.

Constantinus succeeded him, and *Aurelius*

Conanus

Conanus Nephew to *Arthur* followed him, *Vortiporus* followed *Conanus*, then *Malgo Conanus*, afterward *Carelicus*, *Cadvanus* ſucceeded *Carelicus*, and after him *Cadwallus*, and *Cadwalladar*, who was the laſt of the *Britiſh* Kings; for leaving his Grand fathers Kingdom of his own accord, he ſailed into *Britany* in *France*, by vvhoſe abſence the courage of the *Saxons* grew ſo great, that coming in vvith great multitudes, they vanquiſhed the *Britans*, that were now vvithout a King, and they eaſily brought the vvhole Iſland under their Juriſdiction. *Cadwallader* ſtriving to ſtand againſt their violence, vvas admoniſhed (as it is ſuppoſed) from Heaven, to go to *Rome*, and to betake himſelf to a ſpiritual life, vvhere he died a Monk. The *Saxons* being now Maſters of all, divide this vaſt Iſland into ſeven Kingdoms, and as many Kings; yet he that was moſt powerfull was called King of *England*, ſo that it is apparent enough, that in this Heptarchy there vvas a Monarchy. And now the Chriſtian Religion had taken no ſmall root, (the clouds of Heatheniſh Errours being diſperſed) by D^r *Auſtin*, the *Engliſh* Apoſtle, as they called him: And this light vvas received by the *Engliſh* men with ſo great Zeal, that they ſtrove to enter their Names, built Churches, and performed Divine duties.

The *Saxon* Government flouriſhed exceedingly under this Heptarchy for a long time; untill that inteſtine Warre roſe amongſt them, and brought all things under the power of the *Weſt-Saxons*. For *Egbert*, King of the *Weſt-Saxons*, vvhen he had by Arms ſubdued four

Kingdoms, and was in hope to overcome the other two; in memory of his Countrey, after the name of *Britans* and *Saxons*, he commanded that all the Inhabitants should be called *English-men*, and the Countrey *England*.

Now the affairs of the *English* seemed to be at the height, when they were next to their ruine; so false is the appearance of all humane things, that when they glitter most, they may be supposed to be in the declining. For the *Danes* playing the Pirats about the *English* Coasts for a long time, at last by force they enter the Land. *Angarus* and *Hubo* being their Captains, and they wasted the Countrey miserably, sparing neither sacred nor common, which is apparent by a most famous example of the holy Virgins of *Coldingham*, vvho to preserve their purity, dismembred their bodies. For foreseeing the violence of the mad Souldiers every where, they cut off their own nostrils and their upper lips, that being like to Monsters, they might mitigate the dishonest lasciviousnes of an unbelieving Nation. The Kings of the *Mercians* and *Eastern English* were killed by them; and their Kingdoms were possessed with no small part of *Northumberland*: at last to repress the Insolency of these *Danes*, a great Tribute was laid upon the people, which was commonly called *Dan* or *Dans-gelt*. At length they were valiantly repulsed by *Alfred* King of the *West-Saxons*, and are driven out of all *Mercia*. Upon his Victories *Edward* his Sonne succeeding, subdued the East part of *England*, driving out the *Danes*. But *Adelstan* this Kings Bastard Sonne, cast such a fear upon them,

them, that they yeelded not only *Northumberland*, but alſo all *England* unto him; and ſome of them became his Subjects willingly. But *Ethelrede* a weak and ſluggiſh King reigning, taking heart again, they once more invade the Land, ſpoil and waſte it miſerably, whereby the *Engliſh* were provoked to conſpire together, and ſo in one night they killed all the *Danes*, through the whole Iſland, and quencht ſo great a fire with the bloud of the Authors of it. *Swain* King of *Denmark*, being urged with this great ſlaughter of his Subjects, invades *England* with a mighty Army. He puts *Ethelrede* to flight, and brought the whole Land under his Obedience, and by his death he paſſed it over to his Sonne *Canutus*, who fought with *Ethelrede* (who came back again with his Son *Edmundus*) upon a changeable fortune, and left his two Sons to ſucceed him. *Harold* his Baſtard, and *Canutus* the Bold; But when they were dead, the Kingdom returned again unto the *Engliſh*, who ſhook off the *Daniſh*-Yoke. and *Edward* Son to *Ethelred* was made King. Now it was that *England* began to take breath; but as it commonly fals out, idleneſs became the ruine of many: The lazy Prieſts, for the moſt part, being at eaſe, took care of all things but their Office. The people being more diſſolute with Luxury, grew contemptible by ſluggiſh dulneſs; Learning decayed, the Common-wealth waſted with divers Vices, Pride and Negligence had made a ready path for their Ruine.

Of the first Norman *King* WILLIAM *the Conquerour.*

Wilhelmus Conquestor. Rex Anglia Dux Norman: etc.

Anno 1067.

EDward the *Confessour* last dead, whilst he lived in *Normandy*, had promised after his Decease, the Kingdom of *England* to *William* Duke of *Normandy*, as he was his Kinsman and near of Blood, yet that *William* was a Bastard, Sonne of *Robert* King of *Normandy*, begot on

a Countrey Maid. But *Harold* the Sonne of *Godwin* Earl of *Kent*, a bold man, and a good Souldier, poſſeſſed himſelf, by force, of the Kingdom, during the *Inter-regnum*, not waiting for the conſent of the Nobility, though his Brother *Toſto* ſtrove againſt him all he could, and made Warre with him; but at *York* he loſt his life in a pitched Battel. In the mean while, *William* Duke of *Normandy*, depending on his right, raiſing an Army, came for *England* to the *South-Saxons*: *Harold* hearing of his arrivall, though his Souldiers were tired with a late fight, ſets up his Standard againſt his new gueſt *William*. Not farre from *Haſtings* they fought a ſore Battel; but fortune turning againſt the *Engliſh*, *Harold* driven forward with a Warlike fury, riding into the midſt of the Enemies, and fighting valiantly, vvas ſlain, and a great number of his men were ſlain vvith him. *William* the Conquerour preſently brings his Conquering Banners to *London*, and is proclaimed King by the people that remained, having got a Kingdom by a lawfull Victory, which (as he ſaid) was given him by God. This King (which is the uſe for Conquerours to do) aboliſhing forthwith all the Cuſtoms of the *Engliſh* Nation, and the greateſt part of their Laws, brought in immediately his own Countrey faſhions, and commanded that all Cauſes whatſoever ſhould be pleaded in *French*. And excluding all the Engliſh that had born Arms againſt him out of their Patrimonies, he diſpoſed of all their Demeans, Lands, Fields, and the reſt of their Goods amongſt his Souldiers for a reward of their Victory; but reſerving to him-

himself the direct Principality and Homage, held to Himself and his Heirs, as a tenure from the Crown; so that none but the King should be the right and true Lord of any thing. Also he caused a Seal to be made for himself, wherein was engraved, *By this acknowledg* William *of* Normandy *to be your Patron*: but on the other side vvas engraven, *By this Seal you must know that the same is King of* England. Having thus subdued the power of the Laity, he turns himself to the Clergy, and made an Edict, That no *English* Monk should be capable of any secular Dignity, disdaining the facilness of *Canutus*, who was formerly King, who had continued the honours entire to the people vvhom he had subdued; by which lenity the Inhabitants growing bold, after his death easily expelled forreigners, and recovered their former Liberty.

Then he appeased the approaching Warre of the *Danes*, by giving them money, that he might enjoy it peaceably upon any rate. And hence it was that the *English* vvere in no fear at all of the *Danes* that formerly so much infested them: yet they were not so free from troubles, but that here or there, there were some tumults amongst the people, that were hardly suppressed and overcome, but the windy faction was soon dispersed.

The greatest matter was the Rebellion of his Sonne *Robert* in *Normandy*, because it was most against Nature. This Sonne at the Instigation of *Philip* King of *France*, demanded this Dukedom of his Father, as his proper Right; and without more words enters upon *Normandy* by force of Arms. It is true, his Father had promised

miſed him this Territory, but the Son was weary of delay, nor would he longer forbear from the Government he hoped for. The King hearing of his Sons Enterprize, ſuddenly goes againſt him with a gallant Army; They meet in Battel, the Son unhorſes his Father, and wounds him in the Arm. But when he knew his Fathers voice, alighting from his own horſe, he raiſed his Father from the ground, and kneeling down before him, craved pardon for his boldneſs, which he obtained preſently, his Father embracing him in his Arms. However he ſeemed thus to have appeaſed his Fathers wrath, yet God never ſuffering ſuch faults to go unpuniſhed, he had no good luck ever after. *William*, by ſuch clemency, was miraculouſly eminent, in other caſes, raiſing not a few of his adverſaries, (a rare example) to the greateſt Dignities, as if he endeavoured by his gentleneſs to mitigate their fierce ſpirits, and to calm their rebellious mindes, that they might be eminent in their duty to their Benefactor, as he was in beſtowing benefits on his enemies, and ſhould bluſh to deny Obedience unto him, whom they had offended, without danger. Having conquered therefore the Rebels, partly by good turns, partly by the Sword, he at length endeavours to enlarge his Kingdom, bringing *Wales* under his Command, and cauſing *Malcom* King of *Scots* to do him Homage, and ſo adding new Countries, he rewarded *England* for the Crown they granted to him. Yet leaſt the frowardneſs of his newly conquered Subjects ſhould grow inſolent, he laid upon them Taxes and Tributes that were not very light, and for the honour of his own Country, he

he made the Laws to be debated in the *French* Tongue, and he bridled the haughtineſs of the Monks. Only the men of *Kent* held their old Cuſtoms: For the King upon a certain time journeying toward *Dover*, was handſomly circumvented by the Inhabitants of *Kent*, carrying boughs cut down from the Trees, and they would not let him depart untill he had granted them the enjoyment of their Ancient Cuſtoms. Alſo he was indulgent to the *Londoners*, to let them enjoy the priviledges they had in the time of *Edward* the Confeſſor; but he forbad the Nobility from hunting of Deer, reſerving thoſe ſports for himſelf only.

He diſpoſed no leſs of Church Affairs, compoſing a difference between the Archbiſhops of *Canterbury* and *York*, for that this was ſubject to that; and ever after the Archbiſhop of *York* was called Primate of *England*, and the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, Primate of all *England*. Alſo he made the Churches of *Scotland* to be under the Primate of *York*, as the Churches of *England* were under *Canterbury*.

Though he ſeemed to curb the inſolency of the Clergy, he had them yet in great eſteem: For *Aldred* Archbiſhop of *York* being angry, becauſe he could not obtain what he asked, and offering to go away in a fury, the King not enduring the hatred of that Prelate, fell down at his knees, and humbly asked forgiveneſs of him. The Biſhop being admoniſhed to raiſe up the King, anſwered, *No*, but ſaid, *He ſhall feel what it is to offend* St. *Peter*. By the largeneſs of his Benefits he ſhewed forth the love he bare unto Churchmen, building innumerable Churches for the

ſervice

ſervice of God, with Monaſteries and other ſacred Houſes.

About the end of his Life and Kingdom he placed his two Sons *Robert* and *Henry*, almoſt in equal power over *Normandy*. There aroſe on a day a quarrel between *Henry*, and *Lewis* the *Dolphin* of *France*, playing at Tables, which was the cauſe of a great contention between the *French* and the *Normans*: The *Dolphin* drawing *Robert* on his ſide, enters *Normandy* with an Army. *William* forthwith having his Navy ready, ſails into *Normandy*, and with no difficulty, reducing his Son *Robert* to his former obedience, he marched to *Roan*, that he might finde the *French* men work; when he was weary with toyling, being very fat, he made an halt a while: The *French* derided *William* becauſe he was ſick, and by reaſon of his fat belly, ſpeaking ſcoffingly, *That he was with childe and ready to be delivered.* When this jeer was told to *William*, he anſwered, *If pleaſe God that I ever recover of this child-birth, I will burn a thouſand lights to God in token of my thankfulneſs.* Nor was it long before he entred the Territories of *France*, and waſted all with fire and ſword. Yet ſhortly after, falling into a relapſe of the ſame weakneſs, he died at *Roan*: His followers not only forſook him being dead, but ſpoiled him of what he had. And his Body unfortunately, being thrice forſaken, at laſt, was let down into his own Monument at *Cane* in *Normandy*, but not entire.

Wilhelmus II D. G. Rex Angliæ et Dux Norman: Anno 1087.

WILLIAM whose firname was *Rufus*, the third Son, succeeded the Conquerour. The beginning of his Reign was unquiet and troublesom, his Brother *Robert* being offended with him, for taking the succession from him; the Nobility being divided, and conspiring his destruction. But he freed himself of all this danger, partly

partly by force, partly by rewards, and partly by Arms, ſo that he pacified them all.

But the greater Tempeſt was threatned from *Scotland*, now ready to ariſe, for *Malcom* King of the *Scots*, though he ought Homage to the *Engliſh*, conjecturing, amongſt ſo many troubles, that he had now a fit opportunity to be proſperous in his buſineſs, with great force entred *Northumberland*, and with fire and ſword he conſumed all he met with; and loaded with ſpoils, he returned into his Countrey. But *William* having provided an Army, invaded *Scotland*, and ſubduing *Malcom*, brought him at laſt to his obedience; and made him give Hoſtages for ſecurity.

Robert the Kings Brother once more proclaims Warre againſt him, becauſe he paid him not the money they were agreed upon; and the King of *France* taking his part, he took ſome Towns by Force from his Brother, which of Right belonged to him. But *William* bribed the *French* King, and ſo depriving his Brother of all help, he eaſily compelled him to crave pardon for his Retrayners.

But that all things might take their turns, *Malcom*, taking occaſion of raiſing Arms from the contempt of the *Engliſh*, provoked *William* by a new injury, ſpoyling his Countrey: But when, being loaden with the ſpoil, he thought to return home, by chance being intercepted by Ambuſh, he loſt his Life, and the Prize he had got. But yet this put not an end to the Troubles, for the *Welſh* ſetting upon the King already incumbred, depopulated his Territories in the vvay, vvhom at laſt *William* overcame in a ſucceſsfull Battel.

In

In the mean while *Robert Mowbray*, by whose valour *Malcom* was subdued, supposing himself to be despised, or not so much honoured as he deserved, procuring some other Noblemen to joyn with him, riseth up against his Soveraign: but the King suddenly falling upon the small number of the Conspirators, easily put an end to this tumultuous Warre, taking *Mowbray* prisoner. Yet least the *Welsh* should rise again afresh, however their stubbornness was beaten down, and should occasion greater danger: *William* now endeavours wholly to Conquer them, invading their Kingdom, and building of Bulwarks; But when this Warre proved to be tedious, the businesse being recommended to *Hugh* Earl of *Shropshire*, and to the Earl of *Chester*, the King left them: They cruelly handled the *Welsh*, cutting off their Nostrils and their Ears, untill such time as the Earl of *Shropshire* being slain, *Hugh* Count of *Chester*, killing the King of *Wales*, obtain'd a full Victory over them.

Whilst *Lanfranc* Archbishop of *Canterbury* lived, he was ruled as with a Bridle, but after he vvas dead, being as it were, freed from all bands, the State of the Church being oppressed he began to rage with immoderate Tributes, and hard Laws: Now was the first time that all Ecclesiastical Preferments vvere set to sale, and any thing was lawfull for Money. Yet the Tyranny of this King was not wholly voyd of doing good, for he gave freely to a poor Monk a Benefice, for which two others contended violently, beating the Bargain vvith great summe of Money.

However

However all these vices were made good by his great Magnanimity, for hearing of the siege of the Town of *Mantium*, breaking through a Wall, that he might the sooner enter, none following him, but such as were couragious like himself, and despising the danger of the turbulent Sea, he came unexpected, and freed the place, putting the Enemy to flight, and taking their Captain prisoner, who was *Helias* Earl of *Flescia*. That Earl when he saw himself captivated, imputed this his misfortune to the unlooked for arrival of the King, threatning great matters against the King, if he were once at Liberty, whereupon he was set free to do what he could.

Also he shewed a wonderful example of notable courage at a Fort call'd St *Michael's* Mount, for he was suddenly set upon by three Cavaliers, and although he was already unhorsed, he defended himself valiantly with his Saddle for a Target, and his drawn Sword, untill such time as he was rescued by his followers. When as those that accompanied him, found fault with his too great care for his Saddle, *Yes*, saith he, *I would rather have lost my life, then have left that to the scorn of the Enemy.*

He was faithfull in his promise, betwixt both in continence, he neither despised, nor yet adored Religion, but he was extream covetous. This was the first King of *England* that would look into the faults of the Clergy, and reserved to himself the punishing of them, neglecting the Bishop of *Rome*.

Last of all, being much given to hunting, he

was unhappily slain by an Arrow that rebound-
ed from the Back of a Stag, and buried at *Win-*
chester. (The foreshewing signs of his unhappy
end being foreseen, but not regarded.)

HENRY

HENRY *the First, King of* England.

Henricus. I. D. G. Rex Angliæ et Dux Norman:

Anno 1101.

HEnry the First ſucceeded his Brother, born of *William* in *England*, not a Duke but a King. Who in the abſence of his elder Brother *Robert*, either invaded the Kingdom, or procured it with money, or obtained it by the favour of the people; for he was more Learned than all his Brothers, and was ſo much the more

dear to the people. He made good the Kingdo
he had got with fraud, by good Deeds, Gentle
neſs, and juſt Puniſhments: He every where pre
ferred Learned men for places in the Church; H
removed ſuch as were unlearned and unworth
from their places: He mitigated the more ſever
Laws, and aboliſhed hard Cuſtoms. He granted th
Nobility free leave to hunt; and with his bount
he ſo won the hearts of all. And becauſe he knew
that the *Scotch* were his ill-willers, he made Peac
with them, and to bind the League the faſter, h
took *Maud* the ſiſter of King *Edgar* to be hi
Wife. That which hapned to his Father and t
his Brothers, hapned to him, to have the firſt ſuc
ceſs of Warre from his own kindred. Namely, th
Biſhop of *Durrham* being the firſt mover of
(whom he had caſt into priſon for exacting to
great Tributes) who had eſcaped his Keepers b
reaſon of their neglect, his Brother *Robert* Duk
of *Normandy* is ſtirred up to wage Warre wit
Henry, and to recover his right. *Robert* was no
ready in *England* with an Army, and the day fe
the Battel was appointed, when as the Herald
were ſent up and down, at laſt Peace is agree
upon, twenty thouſand Franks being grante
yearly to *Robert*, and hopes of ſucceſſion, ſhoul
he out-live his Brother *Henry*.

This danger ſcarce diſpelled, another fals up
on the neck of it: For *Robert Bellamy* Earl o
Shrewsbury, for no other cauſe but envy, invitin
the *Welſh* to his aid, makes War againſt the King
But this ſtopped him not, for raiſing an Arm
ſuddenly, he put the *Welſh* to flight, he interce
ted *Robert*, and confiſcating all his Goods, ſe
him into Baniſhment: For to puniſh Traito
with death was not yet the faſhion. T

The third tempeſt aroſe from *William* Earl of *Mortane* and of *Cornwall* the Kings Uncle, he being angry with his Couſin for denying him the County of *Kent*, endeavours by treachery to draw the Shire unto himſelf; but his Treaſon being diſcovered, for one County that he thought to win he loſt two.

Henry that was hitherto on the defenſive part, now takes up Arms willingly againſt his Brother *Robert*, being offended at ſome ſcoff of his, and levying an Army, he entred *Normandy*, and became Maſter of it all, ſcarce leaving ſo much as *Roan* to his Brother, and ſo he retreated for *England*. *Robert* had made trial of his ſeverity, and was reſolved to make proof of his lenity, whereupon he follows after his Brother into *England*, and very ſubmiſſive, deſires pardon for his ſawcineſs. But *Henry*, either offended with the now freſh injury of his Brother, or elſe affecting the Dukedom of *Normandy*, neglected the prayers of his Brother. *Robert* being impatient of this ſcorn, returns for *Normandy*, and once more raiſing an Army, attempts a Warre againſt his Brother; but he coming ſucceſsfully upon *Robert* with a ſufficient Force, providently ſuppreſſed the miſchief in the birth, but not without blood; and he carried his Brother Captive into *England*, and putting out his eyes, he held him priſoner to the day of his death.

By this ſucceſs he grew Magnificent, whence aroſe envy againſt him: For *Fulck* Duke of *Anjou*, *Baldwin* Earl of *Flanders*, and *Lewis* ſirnamed the *Groſs*, King of *France*, entring a League, with joynt Forces, they endeavour to reſtore to *William* the Sonne of *Robert* the Land

of his Grandfather. *Henry* preſently tranſports his Forces into *Normandy*, and encountring the Battel, put the *French* to flight, and after that he had diverſly made trial of Fortune: In fine, Peace is confirmed between the Duke of *Anjou* and *Henry*, vvhich is confirmed by Marriage between *William* the Kings Son, and the ſaid Dukes Daughter. After this Peace followed between both theſe Kings, the Dukedom of *Normandy* being granted to *William* the Son of *Henry*, doing Homage for it. And thus by continuance of time, all the firſt-born Sons of the Kings of *England* are ſtyled Dukes of *Normandy*. But *Charles* Earl of *Flanders*, being wickedly ſlain at *Bruſſels*, leaving no other Heir, *William* the Son of *Robert*, vvho was the next right Heir to it (for that he was from the blood of *Maud* Daughter to *Baldwin*, and Wife to *William* the Conquerour) was elevated to this Dignity, who growing inſolent with this proſperity, endeavours to recover *Normandy* his Patrimony by his Grandfather, which he brought to paſs with no great difficulty, by aſſiſtance of the *French* King; but receiving a wound in one of his hands, which was very ſmal, and afterwards rankling, he loſt both his Life and Patrimony by it.

Peace being confirmed abroad, yet *Henry* was toſſed at home with civil Commotions, *Wales* being entred into a Conſpiracy, whereupon he purſuing the Rebels, erring in his paſſage, he fell into a ſtraight place, and redeemed, yet not without danger, a thouſand Sheep and Oxen from them. And theſe were the Wars he had both at home and abroad.

He

He ſeldom or never Taxed the Land: He made none but good Laws: He was the firſt that ordained the convening of the ſeveral Orders, which is now called a Parliament. He puniſhed Theeves, and falſe Coyners with ſevere juſtice: He diminiſhed the power of the Pope in his Dominions, and ſuch Suits as were decided in *England*, he forbad to be called back to *Rome* without his cognizance thereof, the Pope not ſpeaking any thing againſt it. But a greater Controverſie aroſe concerning Eccleſiaſtical Promotions, both of them ſtanding ſtoutly for his own Intereſt: But the King not regarding the Pope, held in his own hands the power of diſpoſing and confirming Offices.

If he were over-luxurious, yet he was noble in his choice, not loving every one in extreams.

He had no lawfully begotten Sons, but he had many Baſtards, whereupon he endeavoured by all means to eſtabliſh the Government in *Maud* and her Daughters, but all in vain; *Stephen* ſucceeding, who was born from *Adela*, Daughter to *William* the Conquerour, excluding *Maud* his Wife and Daughter, which firſt married *Henry* the fourth the *Roman* Emperour, and he being dead, ſhe was married to *Jeffrey Plantagenet*, the Sonne of *Fulc* the Duke of *Anion*.

At laſt, by reaſon of ſome quarrel with the Duke of *Anion*, he fell into grief of mind, whence followed a great weakneſs of his body, by over-eating of Eels, and thence he fell into a burning Feaver, and ſo died after he had reigned thirty five years, in the forreſt of *Lions*, and was buried in *Redding Abby*, being the laſt of the *Norman* Kings.

Stephanus D. G. Rex Ang. Com: Bon: et Mor: etc.

Anno 1136.

HEnry being dead, *Stephen* upon a doubtfull Title, and his elder Brothers delaying, first poſſeſſing, ſucceeded. He won the *Engliſh*, partly by promiſes, partly by Benevolence, to which was added his Title of Inheritance. Having laid hold on the Kingdom by promiſes, he endeavours to make it good by courteſie. He

took

took off the heavieſt Taxes, and granted his own Right to the Clergy, which the former Kings kept to themſelves. Alſo he would that Churchmen ſhould be free from yeelding Obedience to the temporal Magiſtrate: Thus he won the people and the Church-men, and the Nobility, by granting them free leave to Hunt, and liberty to build Caſtles. His Brother *Theobald*, who by his Birthright was next to the Crown, he pacified by a yearly Penſion.

Moreover, to win the good will of ſtrangers, he obtained for his Sonne *Euſtachius*, *Conſtance* the Daughter of *Lewis* King of *France*: yet he did not more by that Marriage, than by Treaſures ſtrengthen himſelf in the Kingdom of King *Henry*, which he ſpent not luxuriouſly, but to levy Souldiers, and to wage Warre with.

He was ſcarce Crowned, before he was forced to fall to his Arms; for *David* King of *Scotland*, ſtriving to aſſert the Intereſt of *Maud* the Empreſs, proclaimed Warre againſt *Stephen*, and poſſeſſed himſelf of the Towns of *Carlile* and *New-caſtle*. *Stephen* marched againſt him with a great Army, and granting *Cumberland* to *David*, and the County of *Huntington* to his Sonne, he put by a Tempeſt that was coming on, without any blood-ſhed at all.

Not long after he was ſhaken with Civil Commotions, greater than before, for when he was ſickly, he was reported by ſome to be dead; whereupon the Nobles, abuſing their Caſtles to the Kings ruine, conſpired together, and endeavour to get the Kingdom into their own power. *Stephen*, leaſt by delay the danger ſhould get ſtrength,

ſtrength, partly by his Captains, partly with his own hand, he ſubdued the boldneſs of the Rebels. He marched againſt *Baldwin* the Ring-leader of the Conſpirators, and driving him out of *Oxford*, he purſues him as farre as the Iſle of *Wight*, and forcing him from thence, he enjoyned him perpetual baniſhment. He was ſcarce quiet at home, but a Warre from abroad puts him to further trouble. For *Jeffrey Plantagenet*, relying on the Title of *Maud* his Wife, invades *Normandy* with offenſive Arms, and ſtrives to poſſeſs himſelf of his Grandfathers Territories. *Stephen* quickly levying an Army, haſtens thither, they having fought in divers ſmall skirmiſhes, come to an agreement, namely, that *Jeffrey* ſhould abſtain from all Title and Right, *Stephen* paying to him an annuity of thirty five thouſand Franks: When he returned, he found the Kingdom full of Warre and Tumults; for the Nobility enter upon a Conſpiracy, becauſe the King kept not his promiſes, and every one of them, makes War in his own Dominions. Alſo *David* King of *Scotland*, forgetfull of his Covenant, enters upon *Northumberland*, and miſerably made havock of all by fire and ſword, he neither ſpared women nor innocent children, he kils the Prieſts before the Altars, the ſacred Virgins are raviſhed in the Churches.

The King to oppoſe himſelf againſt the greateſt danger, firſt bends his Forces againſt the *Scots*. But the Warre during long, giving command to *Thurſtin* Archbiſhop of *York* to wage Warre with the *Scots*, he returned home that he might tame the reſt of the Rebels, which by force of Arms, by Promiſes, and by his Benevolence, he

he at laſt reclaimed. *Thurſtin* in the mean time, joyning Battel, ſubdued the *Scots*, and ſlew them with a great ſlaughter, for eleven thouſand *Scots* were ſlain in the fight, beſides thoſe that ran away, and were killed in the purſuit. The King being made more bold by this ſucceſs, enters now with Arms upon *Scotland*, and afflicted *David* with a ſore loſs, and compelled him to beg for Peace, which at laſt he yeelded to; *Stephen* taking *Henry* the Son to *David* for Hoſtage. *Stephen* returning laid ſiege to *Ludlow*, the Receptacle for the Conſpirators, and with his own hand he freed *Henry*, whom he had taken for a Pledge.

The moſt cruel Tempeſt followed this fortune, For *Maud* requiring her Right, arrived in *England*: *Stephen* hearing this, layes ſiege to *Arundel*-Caſtle, where by chance ſhe harboured her ſelf; but in this deſperate ſiege, vvater being all ſpent, *Maud* delivered up the Caſtle, having leave given her to retire towards *Briſtol*.

In the mean while he quickly removes to *Lincoln*, taken by *Randulph* Sonne to *Robert* Earl of *Gloceſter*, and environs it with a ſiege; The Earls of *Cheſter* and *Gloceſter*, endeavouring to free the City, fight with *Stephen* hand to hand; in which fight, *Stephen* is taken priſoner, after that he had given wonderfull arguments of his proweſs; and he is brought before *Maud*, who ſent him toward *Briſtol* to be impriſoned, and ſhe in the mean while poſſeſſeth the Kingdom, entring *London* as Conqueroun in Triumph.

But *Maud* or *Mathilde*, the Wife of *Stephen*, hearing

hearing of the Kings misfortune, humbly intreated *Maud*, that ſhe being of a long time weary of the Government, might have liberty to live with her Husband a private life. Alſo the *Londoners*, they require their ancient Laws which they enjoyed under *Edward* the *Confeſſor*; but *Maud* would grant neither. *Maud* not enduring the high ſtomack of *Mathilde*, and deteſting ignoble ſervitude, cals for *Euſtachius* her Son, with a ſelect company of Souldiers out of *Kent* to *London*, who joyning with the *Londoners*, that were wonderfully offended that their ſuits were denied them, alſo fortifying himſelf with the help of the Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, they fall upon the Army of *Mathilde*, which fled privately to *Oxford*, and asked not help in vain of *David* King of *Scotland*, by whoſe aſſiſtance her Army being encreaſed, ſhe beſieged *Wincheſter*: But the Queen with her Son *Euſtachius*, falling on her Fortreſs, overcame *Mathilde* in a pitched Battel, and took *Robert* Son to *Mathilde*, but *Mathilde* her ſelf eſcaped luckily. A Treaty for Peace followed this Fortune, whereby *Robert* on the one hand, *Stephen* on the other are ſet at liberty; but there was no other Condition agreed upon, wherefore the Trumpet ſounds again to Warre, and *Stephen* being now free, beſieges *Mathilde* at *Oxford*; But ſhe deſpiſing danger, paſſed through his Army in the night. Yet ſhe was ſo frighted with the preſent danger, that ſhe ever after forbare to make Warre with him, leaving the Charge of the whole Buſineſs to her Sonne *Henry*.

In the mean while the City of *Lincoln* was vali-

valiantly defended againſt the King. But at laſt the Earl willingly yeelded to the King, deſiring reconciliation; yet *Stephen* entertained him not ſo courteouſly, but ſpoil'd the miſerable Earl of all his Eſtate; by which perjury he did not a little alienate the mindes of his Subjects.

Henry by the death of his Father *Jeffrey*, having got the Dukedom of *Anion* and of *Aquitan*, and with his Wife *Eleonar* the County of *Poictiers*, by a freſh attempt, but with a few Souldiers, ſails for *England*, hoping at laſt to regain his Grandfathers Kingdom. He was no ſooner landed, but his Friends came flocking to him every way, and being fortified with new helps, he layes ſiege to *Malmsbury*, but the King coming upon him with more Forces, overcame the fewer Forces of the Enemy.

Here is a thing to be rightly wonder'd at, amongſt drawn Swords Peace began to ſhew her ſelf, *Stephen* procured reſt by granting, which he could not obtain by Victories; and *Henry* obtained that Kingdom peaceably, which he ſought for by Warre: For whilſt here and there, with equal endeavours they wage Warre, *Euſtachius* ſuddenly died, and *Stephen* being deprived of an Heir to ſucceed him, being overcome with mourning, he willingly entred Conditions of Peace with *Henry* and *Mathilde*, whereby he aſſigned his Enemy to be his Succeſſour, and adopted him for his Son, being he had none nearer of blood unto him; ſo little Faith or Conſtancy is there in humane Affairs, they that but now fought with all their might, do now embrace one the other, and *Ste-*

phen

phen recovers his loſt Son, by adopting his Enemy. So *Henry* ſeeking ſo great a Kingdom by Warre, found both the Kingdom and a Father in Peace.

The Affairs of *England* were too troubleſom for *Stephen* to exact Tribute from his Subjects, yet he abundantly recompenſed this loſs, by ſtoring the Exchequer with the goods of the Rebels. He made no Laws, when as by reaſon of a continual War, he ſeemed more ready to receive than to give: Yet he had no greater Victory than over the Clergy, vvhoſe obſtinacy and pride he regulated, and made them good Subjects. He that had lived in War and Contention, ought not to dy without trouble and neglect; for he had ſcarce made Peace with *Henry*, but he was afreſh ſeized on by his old diſeaſe of the Emrods and the Cholick, having not been free from Warre one Year, he died at *Dover*, at the age of 49 years, and lieth buried at *Feverſham*.

HENRY *the Second, King of* England.

Henricus II. D. G. Rex Ang: & Dux Norman: etc Dom: Hib:

Anno 1155.

STEPHEN being now dead, *Henry* Duke of *Anjou* ſucceeded him in the Throne, as he and King *Stephen* had agreed. He behaved himſelf wiſely when he began to Reign, chooſing the wiſeſt men for his Counſellors, expelling ſtrangers that came in hopes of rapine, eſpecially thoſe of *Flanders*, demoliſhing the Caſtles that the Nobility

hey had built, at the contrivance of King *Stephen*, which they had often abused to Sedition. The Laws also that were faulty, during the time of War, he reduced to their former Integrity, and he banished some of the Nobility for perjury. The Demeans which were bestowed upon those that were unworthy of them, by Licence from King *Stephen*, he took to himself, and so he spared his Subjects from Tributes, thinking it safer to offend a few than many. He had yet no Competitors, and so was safer from Incursions and Rebellions. The *Welsh* made some rude Commotion, who were no sooner up, but he subdued them. He made offensive Warre against *Malcom* King of *Scots*, and drove them out by force from *Northumberland*, the City of *Carlile* and *Newcastle*, which King *Stephen* had granted him.

He left him *Huntington* to do him Homage for it, for *David* King of *Scots* sake, who was dead. He took by force from his Brother *Jeffrey*, after his Fathers Death, the Dukedom of *Anion* which his Father had granted him upon intreaty, having the Popes Indulgence to break his Oath.

Then he attempts to take to himself, from *Raymundus* Earl of a place consecrated to Saint *Ægidius*, the Dukedom of *Tholouse*, which of right belonged unto him, and when *Lewis* the King of *France* would help *Raymund*, he wages Warre with them both. Now the Armies were ready for Battel, but at the mediation of friends, Peace is at last concluded, and the County of *Tholouse* is granted to *Raymund* for a time, a Marriage being made between *Henry* King of *Englands* Son, and *Margaret* Daughter to King *Lewis*.

If

If he managed all things wisely hitherto, now he doth order his matters as foolishly, taking his Son *Henry* into the Government with him. For *Lewis* scorning the pusillanimity of his Son in Law, that he would permit his Father to be equal with him in the Kingdom, and would himself be a Titular King only, he easily inflamed his youthfull minde that was ready to take fire with unlawfull desires. This envy had now broke forth into open hate, and the Son began to cavil at all the Father either did or said. Nor was the Sons Ingratitude unknowne to the Father; wherefore Messengers being sent to *Lewis*, he endeavoured to oppress and extinguish those beginnings of Discord. But *Lewis* laught at the words of the Embassadours, asking scornfully, *Why they call'd him their Master, who had freely delivered up his Right to his Son*, and so dismissed them without any other Answer. To this there was joyned the malice of Queen *Eleoner* that she bare him, by reason that he loved Whores, whereby she instigated her other two Sons, *Richard* and *Jeffrey*, that they should assist the Son against the Father.

They fled to *Henry* into *Normandy*, and conspire joyntly against their Father. Also *William* King of *Scotland*, *Hugh* Earl of *Chester*, *Roger Mowbray*, *Hugh Bigot*, and others, fell from him. *Henry* with this Augmentation grew more bold, and now provides open Warre against his Father: Fortune was changeable in divers Battels, both courage and fraud being employed in the Warres. But *Richard* who had fallen off from his Father, repenting of his errour, came to him, and craved pardon, which he easily ob-

obtain'd; at last some of the Rebels being taken, and the *Scotch* vanquished, Peace is confirmed between the Father and the Sonne, at the Mediation of *Richard*, *Adela* the Daughter of *Lewis* being married to *Richard*. And so *Henry* returned into *England* with his Sons, where *Henry* his eldest Sonne died, and his Relict is sent home again into *France* to her Father, and afterwards she was married to the King of *Hungary*.

But *Richard* taking it ill that his Marriage was so long deferred (for the Father by his unlawfull lust, was supposed to keep *Adela* for himself, continually putting off the Matrimony) fell again into the same Rebellion which he had renounced by Oath. And being confederate with his Brother *John*, and with *Philip* then King of *France*, he makes Warre with his Father, and at *Ments* he besieged the old King, who slipt away in the night, and thought, though in vain, to raise the siege; at last the Town is delivered into the enemies hands, to his greater loss, because King *Henry* was born in that Town: Wherefore, either by reason of his Power broken, or by the loss of his native City, his Majesty being eclipsed, he that had hitherto given Laws, was now forced to take Laws from the Enemy. And these are the Warres that he waged.

This King subdued *Ireland* without spilling blood, Pope *Hadrian* an *English* man commanding it, and he built a magnificent Palace at *Dublin* for the use of his Posterity.

He augmented his Treasure more by Confiscations and Parsimony, than by Tributes and Imposts,

posts. Because he was too sparing toward his children, it is supposed that gave them occasion to revolt, but he left an infinite Treasure when he died, and recompensed abundantly the want they had sustained.

In the beginning of his Reign, he cut off something from the severity of the Laws, and he erected new Tribunals for the use of his Subjects, and he first commanded the Lions to be kept alive in the Tower of *London*, which custom is continued to this day.

He brought the Clergy under the Magistrate, though *Thomas Becket* stood stifly against it, who for that was banished, and received into favour again by the Intercession of the Pope and the King of *France*, but when he would not yeeld to the Kings pleasure, he was miserably butcher'd by four Souldiers of Horse, but after his death he was consecrated for a Saint. *Henry* also being wrapt up with the love of luxury and of whores, had his Wife alwayes his enemy, which he at last imprisoned, because she had suborned her Sons to Rebel.

The *French* King sent him a Catalogue of all those Rebels that conspired his Death, and when first of all he saw the Name of his younger Son *John*, he sunk down half-dead with grief, and the affliction increasing, he died of it, being above threescore years old, and had ruled the Kingdom of *England* thirty five years, and was buried at *Fontevard* in *Normandy*.

Richardus I. D. G. Rex Ang. Dux Norman: etc Dom. Hib.

Anno 1189.

THis King was Crown'd at *Weſtminſter*, the 3d of *Septemb. Anno* 1189. namely on that Day which was notable for an accidental ſlaughter of the *Jews*, whoſe Inſolence he abundantly reſtrained, by giving Licence to weed out that odious kinde of men. He was famous for Benefits toward his Mother and Brother, receiving

ing her, as it were, into Society of the Government with him, and augmenting the other with six Counties at once. He sent *Adela* that was long before betrothed him, yet as his Fathers Concubine, back again into her Countrey, but not without a Reward of her Virginity, and in her place, that he might not with an incestuous Wedlock, defile his Fathers Bed, he took to Wife *Berengaria* the Daughter of *Garsias* King of *Navar*.

Now at last he resolved to perform his expedition, long intended for the holy Land: Collecting every way great Treasures, and selling Priviledges, Demeans, Immunities, and Cities, *London* it self being scarce left out of the sale. For the time of his absence, he trusted the Kingdom of *England* to *Hugh Baldulph* Bishop of *Durrham*, and to *William Prunellus*, and *William Longo-Scampius* Chancellour of the Kingdom, dividing to each his part: He set *Robert* Earl of *Leicester*, a man of Integrity, over *Normandy* and *Aquitan*. Yet to prevent his Ambition of his Brother *John*, he was minded to send him away for *Normandy*, but the Mother interceding for him, and becoming Surety for his fidelity, he was left in *England*. Lastly, appointing *Arthur* his Brother, *Jeffreys* Son to be his Successour, in case he should die in this Expedition, he entred upon his Voyage.

Richard thus armed with five thousand Horse, and thirty thousand Foot, goes forward on his Journey. He went by Land through *France* to *Marseilles*, with some choice Souldiers to wait in that City for his Fleet, and to Embarque himself there, but the winde being long trou-

blesom it came too late; wherefore being impatient of delayes, he hired Ships, and takes his Passage for *Messana*, whither *Philip* King of *France* was gone with his Navy before. At last also arrived the *English* Fleet; They are received by *Tancred* King of *Sicily*, with a great shew of Courtesie, but he by reason of some old quarrel, was not Friends with *Richard*, and laid snares for *Richard*, and for all the *English*, and by a Confederacy of the Citizens, shut him and all the *English* Souldiers out of the Town: *Richard* offended with this affront, drew up his Souldiers against the City, and easily became Master of it, and had made a great slaughter on the King and the Citizens, had he not pacified *Richard* by paying the Dowry, which he had unjustly detained from *Joan*, *Richard* his Sister, who was married to *William* King of *Sicily* deceased, and had also espoused his Daughter to *Arthur*, Nephew to *Richard*. *Philip* King of *France* first set sail, and came to *Ptolemais*, which City the Christians had a long time besieged, with those he adjoyned himself and his Forces. *Richard* after that wayed Anchor with a hundred and ninety Ships, and fifty Gallies. But by a contrary winde he is driven into *Cyprus*, which Island, when he was kept from landing by the Inhabitants, he invaded by force of Arms, and became Master of it, and leaving *Richard Canvil*, and *Robert Turnham* in it with a sufficient Garrison, he also sailed toward *Ptolemais*; which City, after it had been besieged two years, was delivered up to the Christians by *Saladine*.

Other Cities also he became Master of, all

which he neglected, onely *Joppa* he made a Garrison of. In the mean while *Guido Lusinianus* invades *Tyre*, and with it he takes upon him the Title of King of *Jerusalem*, which he afterwards changed for the Kingdom of *Cyprus*. And hence it was that the Kings of *England* for a long time, were called Kings of *Jerusalem*. But *Philip* envying this Glory of *Richard*, and emulating him, because he could not equal his vertue, forsaking the Warre, sail'd back for *France*, leaving the business to *Odo* Duke of *Burgundy*, to wage Warre with *Saladine* in his absence. Yet *Richard* would not let him depart, till he had taken his Oath, to attempt nothing against the Dominions of *Richard* in his absence. But he was no sooner got home, but against Right and Equity he invaded *Normandy*; with which injury *Richard* being offended, and much weakned by the departure of *Odo* with his Forces, *Richard* resolves homewards, making Peace with *Saladine* upon unjust Tearms. His Navy sailing homewards, he went by Land through *Dalmatia* and *Germany*, at last he came to *Vienna*, where being unknown, he desired to be concealed; at last being discovered by *Leopoldus* Archduke of *Austria*, who was angry with the *English* for the injury was done him in the taking of *Ptolomais*, he vvas cast into Prison, and vvas sent to the Emperour, vvho demanded him, and after a hard Captivity, he was forced to Redeem his Liberty with a mighty Ransom, which injury afterwards cost the Emperour his Life, and *Leopoldus*, first the breaking, and lastly the losing his Leg. But he after four years returned to his Kingdom.

He found his Kingdom full of Troubles and Contentions, for *William Longo-Scampius* Biſhop of *Ely*, vvho in the Kings abſence managed, as it vvere, the vvhole Government, being unaccuſtomed with ſo great an Office, (though he had otherwiſe enough to do of his own buſineſs) grew inſolent and over proud. Hence aroſe a Controverſie between him and Duke *John* the Kings Brother; the King took his Brothers part; vvhereupon he was put out of his Authority, the Archbiſhop of *Roan* being put in his place. When therefore he could no longer make Reſiſtance in the Kingdom, he bethought himſelfe to make an eſcape beyond Sea, diſguiſed in Womans Apparel, but being diſcovered, the Women did puniſh him ſufficiently by deriding him for counterfeiting his Sex, and ſo being much diſgraced, he fled into *Normandy*, to complain to King *Richard*; and when he had complained of the injury done him, he ſought in vain for his loſt dignity.

Alſo *Philip* King of *France* invaded *Normandy* with an Army, as he had promiſed. He ſought to draw *John* the Kings Brother to his ſide, but could not, his Mother *Eleonor* diſſwading him. But though he openly did nothing to his Brothers prejudice, yet privately, a falſe rumour being ſpread of the Kings Death through *England*, he endeavours to wreſt the Kingdom from him, whereby afterwards he loſt all the favour he had with his Brother, together with his Honour. The King after this goes againſt King *Philip* with a great Navy, and firſt he freed the City *Vernowle*, and afterwards *Vandoſme* from his Leaguer ſo haſtily, that the *French* man leaving

ving for fear all his Baggage, ran away. At laſt a Peace being made between both, they are forced to abſtain from Warre, though againſt their wills.

In the mean while his Kingdom was toſſed with various commotions: Firſt, by Theeves, the chief whereof being killed, that faction was eaſily ſuppreſſed. Secondly, by a greater Commotion from the Jews, ariſing from one that had forſworn the Superſtition of his Anceſtors; for the reſt of the Jews being offended at it, vvho continued in their Errour, could hardly Tolerate their Converted Brother, they meet him in the high-way, and fine him ſorely, whence firſt grew a Faction, then a Tumult, and ſlaughter of the Jews every where. Nor was this rage ſhut up in one Town, but paſſing the bounds, it went firſt to *Stamford*, then to *Lincoln*, then to *York*, where the Jews flying into a Caſtle, killing firſt their Wives and Children moſt barbarouſly, and caſting their dead bodies out of the windows on the Enemies heads, putting fire to Gun-powder, they wre almoſt all blown up, a cruel example of their ſtubbornneſs.

Laſtly, It is a Queſtion, Whether the King were more angry with the Commotion, or with the puniſhment of Covetouſneſs, vvhereby he found an end for all his troubles. A certain Souldier who *received wages* from King *Richard* had found a mighty Treaſure, and fearing leaſt the King ſhould demand it, he vvent to *Lemoſin*, and hid it in the Town of *Calacum*, when the Towns-men prolonged to let the King come in, he laid ſiege to it, vvhereby receiving a vvound in his Arm, he died ſhortly after of it, having

having won the Citie, but not found the Treasure, and was buried at *Fontenward*.

He was of a reasonable Stature, of a pleasant and gracefull Countenance, he was commendable in Manners, famous more for his Vertues than Vices, sparing of Tribute, but very cunning to raise Money. He vvas the first that subjected the City of *London* to *Aldermen* and *Sheriffs*, blotting out the Name of *Potent Earls*.

Johannes D. G. Rex Angl: Dux Norman: etc Dom: Hib:

Anno 1201.

RICHARD being dead, JOHN invades the Kingdom by Right of Anticipation, shutting out his Cousin *Arthur*, to whom the Succession was due by Right of Inheritance, and also by the Prerogative of his Age, for *Arthur* was not yet over thirteen years old. Also trusting to his Bribes (for he had robbed those Treasures his Brother had

had compiled) he entred the Government of his own accord, (not caring any thing for the envy of his Subjects) his Friends in *England* not a little helping him.

The first Tempest was depending from his Cousin *Arthur*, whose Kingdom he had not only taken from him, but also had drawn the Dukedom of *Normandy* to himself, leaving only the Dukedom of *Anion* to the childe. Also his Mother *Constance* finding her self too weak for the *English*, flies to the *French* King, and craves aid of him, who promised not only to restore all *Normandy*, but all *England* also to *Arthur*, and received the young man into his protection: Wherefore *Philip* listing an Army, first made good the Duchy of *Anion* to *Arthur*, and then he invaded *Normandy*.

But *John* sailing into *Normandy*, upbraids *Philip* with his perfidiousnes, because he had foully broken the Peace he had made with his Brother *Richard*: Yet they went not to Arms, for while they discourse, and each defends his Right, they agreed on fifty dayes Cessation of Arms, *Baldwin* Earl of *Flanders* being against it, who therefore forsaking *Philip*, made his Peace with the *English*, and takes Counsel by what means, when the Truce was ended they should wage Warre with the *French*. But when *John* was free from the care of Warre, he strikes hand with *Philip* upon unjust terms, and *Baldwin* hating his sluggishnes, joyned with the *French* once more, and restored the Warre of *Jerusalem*. The *English* man was glad, and returns for his Countrey, yet was very ill received by the Nobility, which hated those base Conditions.

ditions. *John* now free from Warre, turns all his care to Pole his Subjects, and to follow his pleasures. Also he deprived his Brother *Jeffrey* Archbishop of *York* of all his Fortune, because he dehorted him from such Injury. Then going into *Normandy*, he Divorced his Wife *Avis*, and married *Isabel* Daughter and Heir to the Earl of *Engolesme*. She was Crown'd at *Canterbury*. But the oppression and violence of King *John* prevailed so far, also his base luxury, not without murder and man-slaughter (for he destroyed *Matilda*, a beautifull Maid) causing her to drink poyson, because she would not yeeld to his intreaty to be corrupted by him, and *William Brause* with his Wife for speaking something freely, he killed all with Famine, taking all their Estate from them. But when he asked Subsidy, all the Nobility, as one man, denied to follow him forth to Wars, unless he would remove the heavy Imposts, and free them from those cursed injuries. Yet he went afterwards into *Normandy*, and then to *Paris*, with his Wife, where they are to outward appearance friendly received by King *Pilip*.

But *Hugh* Earl of *Marsh*, to whom *Isabella* the Kings Wife was first betrothed, being angry with the King for taking his Wife from him, joyned with *Arthur*, and make a new War. *Philip* took their part, and so joyntly those of *Tours* first, then they of *Anjou* invade, and they take the Town *Mirabellum*, with *Eleonor* the Grandmother to *Arthur*, who had fled thither for security, which was notwithstanding received by *Arthur* with great Piety and Obedience.

John reproves King *Philip* for his falsness, and began to think seriously of revenge, and coming suddenly and unlooked for upon the Forces of the Enemy, destroyed them with a great slaughter, taking those Captive vvhich could not run away, amongst whom was *Arthur*, vvho shortly after died in prison of hunger, or going to make an escape, was drowned in the River, or as it is vulgarly thought, he died of grief and sorrow. His Sister *Eleoner* died the same way shortly after.

All Commotions are not extinguished with *Arthur*, but Warre springing out from Warre, now here, now there arise new causes of disagreement: For *Constance* Mother to *Arthur*, complaining to *Philip* of her Sonne *Arthurs* death, she easily instigated him to a just revenge, vvho vvas of his own accord the greatest enemy to *John*. He presently sends his Heralds to *John*, and sets him a day of hearing to appear before him, as one that ought him Homage: But *John* refusing, he entred his Territories by Arms, and in short time he subdued all *Normandy*, as it were in the face of *John*, who stayed sluggishly at *Roan*, and afterwards doing nothing, he returned into *England*, the Nobility gnashing their teeth at it in vain. To this may be added the second and third loss, for *Eleoner*, the Kings Mother died, vvho did the Kingdom as much good by her vertues, as the King did mischief by his vices. *Hubert* Archbishop of *Canterbury* followed her, vvho was another Ornament of the Kingdom.

And now *John* seemed to be in possibility to recover his loss, so his subjects vvould bring

Subsi-

Subsidies to help him to wage Warre, which they strove who should do it most: So he marcheth towards *Portsmouth*, and suddenly set sail, not waiting for the Noblemen that came after him; but he had no sooner left the shore, but he presently returned, and upbraiding the Nobility (because they followed him not) with sluggishness and disobedience, he fined them with a vast summe of Money, and so being the richer by his double Usury, neglecting the Warre, he returned home.

Philip in the mean while, that he might expell all the *English* out of his Kingdom, takes *Chinon* by force, and he had quickly put an end to the Warre, unless *Guido* the Husband of *Constance*, falling off from *Philip*, had joyned with *John*, by whose help he levied a new Army, whereby he took *Mountalbans*, a Town otherwise impregnable, with wonderfull Celerity, in fifteen dayes; and after that storming *Anion*, he gave the Plunder to his Souldiers, rasing the Wals of the Town, but he repented it afterwards, and perchance because he was born in that City, he built it again more firm and beautifull than it was. And now *Philip* and *John* were in Arms, now on this side, now on that, the Army expected the word to fall on, and nothing but blood and slaughter was to be expected, but at the Intercession of Friends, a Cessation was granted for two years.

John therefore returns for *England*, but upon his return he enters the Borders of the *Scotch*, and kils multitudes of them, and brought King *Alexander* to his Obedience, and those *Irish* that he found to have revolted, he sailed with his

Fleet

Fleet thither, and easily brought them under. So he made the Rebel *Welsh* upon his return, become Subjects, taking eight and twenty Noble-mens Children for Pledges, which when the *Welsh* rose again, he commanded to kill them all. So much prevails unadvised desire of wrong, though sometimes it may oppose good examples to unsatisfied Cruelty, and so *John* was more cruel and valiant against none than toward his own Subjects. He returned afterward into *France*, that (as we said) he might repair the wals of *Anion*, when those of *Poictou* revolted to him. But *Lewis* the Son of *Philip* mustering an Army presently, not only mastered and punished the Rebels, but also put all *Johns* Army to flight, and destroyed them, taking the chief Nobility, by which loss, he was brought to desperation, yet making Peace, he returned for *England* to vex his Subjects, and to pour forth all his malice on the Innocent.

In the mean time the Nobility of *England*, because they could obtain from the King no release of their Burdens, conspiring together, wage Warre against him. The King when he was too weak for them, attempted to proceed by Subtilty, and calling the Nobility together, granted them their Requests. But afterwards being discharged by the Pope from his Promises, he takes up Arms against them, and spoiling almost all *England*, he threw down the Castles and Forts of all the Conspirators every where. There was a Bull sent from the Pope against all the Nobility that disobeyed his Commands. The Nobility being too weak for the

King

King in Arms, they commit an unjust and hainous wickedness, calling in the Son of the *French* King to their assistance, and promising Obedience to him, as to their King; He stayed not, but sailed for *England* with a Navy of six hundred Ships. The conspired Nobility joyn'd with him, and so joyning their Forces they came for *London*, where *Lewis* with a fair speech won the Citizens to his side. Also the *Scotch* entred *England* with a mighty Army, destroying all things in the way, whereby *Lewis*, as also by the other Forces being strengthned, over-runs all *England* with ease. *John* in the mean time, lest he should seem to do nothing, gathering together a great many vagabonds, spoils miserably the Lands of his Subjects, at last in the passing of some Rivers, not a few of his followers being drown'd, and being overweakned for want of help, falling thereby into grief of minde, and so into a Feaver, he died within a few dayes, and was buried at *Worcester*.

Great Controversies arose between the King and the Pope during his Reign in Church-matters about the choice of some Bishops: The Pope got the upper hand, and made the King do him Homage, after that the business of the Church had stood still six years, and three moneths.

He was immoderate in blasphemies and execrations; Also he is thought to have sought aid from *Miramumula* King of *Africa*, whilest he was in his troubles, promising to him the Kingdom of *England*, if he conquer'd, and to renounce the Christian Faith. He was sad and dark of countenance, he was tall and fat, sluggish and idle of Nature;

he seldom conquered the enemy, but by force, being inconstant; in adverse Fortune he was easily dejected. He was false in his promises, burdensom to his Subjects, troublesom to his Neighbours, and hated of all.

HENRY

HENRY the Third, King of England.

Henricus III. D. G. Rex Angl. Dux Aquitan. Dom. Hib.

Anno 1207.

AFter *Johns* Decease his First-born Sonne *Henry*, not yet passed nine years old, obtain'd the Kingdom, not without some Controversie of the Nobles: Some of the Nobility falling off to him, who a little before had made a Defection, and swear to King *Lewis*, yet *Lewis* with those that followed him from *London*, with

with an Army of twenty thousand men, won many Towns, till at last he came to the Castle at *Lincoln*, which a certain Noble Woman did manly defend, and caused him to stop, and an Army of the *English* coming on in the mean time, he was repulsed and conquered. Many of the *English* Nobility being taken that stood with him, besides the Count of *Perch*, who preferred an honourable Death before a dishonourable Life, yet he did not despair, but sent for new Forces out of *France*, which were all almost destroyed in a fight at Sea. By these misfortunes he was forced to take Conditions, whereby there were granted to King *Lewis*, in respect of his Charge he had been at, a hundred and five thousand Franks, he renouncing all Right to the Kingdom of *England*, and promising faithfully to prevail with his Father to restore all the Provinces in *France* that belonged to the *English*. But the King restored to the Rebel-Nobility, all the Lands that belonged unto them, and so *Lewis* leaving [illegible], set sail at *Dover* for *France*, having waged War unhappily in anothers Land.

The Union and Rest of the Kingdom being thus established for a time, suddenly there arose a new Faction of the Conspirators. It was known to all what the Intention was, but what hopes they had was unknown to none, because it was fortified but with small Forces, and was unprosperously suppressed, those being punished that refused to submit. At last all care is converted to the recovering of those Provinces in *France*, that belonged to the *English*, large Tributes and Imposts being granted to the King.

For

For though the *French* had promised Restitution of them, yet he would not yeeld them up, but by force of Arms, yet it was deferred untill the King being of riper years, should stand upon his own Right, and should govern the whole matter himself. In the meane while, those fields that were fenced in for Parks by his Ancestors, he laid them open, and restored them for Husbandry, and to the common Good. But when he was grown up, he recalled again those grants, and what he gratified the People with in his Minority, he revoked, turning those fields for his pleasure into Parks again. And not content with this Injury, he alienated the hearts of his Subjects from him by many more unlawfull Acts. He abolished the old Seal, and made a new one, and so extorted a great Summe of Money from his Subjects; Also he greatly drained them, under a pretence of a War with *France*, and managing the matter slothfully, he returned without a Victory, bringing with him out of *France* many of *Poictou*, that what Reward they had not desired in *France*, he might pay them in *England*, whereby the best men were discharged of their Offices, and these vagabonds and strangers were possessed of them. The King being now of ripe years, took to Wife *Eleonor* the Daughter of *Raymund* Earl of *Province*, whereby there grew no profit to his Affairs, but rather by reason of a thred-bare and beggarly Family, and her Kindred coming from all parts, as Crows to the Prey, he suffered great Detriment which yet were highly esteemed by him, the People much murmuring at it.

But whilſt the King that goes about to overthrow his Subjects Rights, which they labour to preſerve, all the Nobility being offended at the Promotion of Strangers, they enter into a Conſpiracy; The Ring-leader whereof vvas *Richard Marſhall*, who durſt freely tell the King of his injuſtice, and required ſatisfaction. But the King to puniſh their Arrogancy, muſter'd a great Army of ſtrangers, and withall cals a Parliament, which is an Aſſembly of ſeverall Orders. The Nobility refuſe to be preſent, unleſs he would command the Biſhop of *Winchester Peter de Rupibus* of *Poictou*, and all his gang to forſake the Court, threatning withall, that unleſs ſatisfaction were made unto them, they would depoſe the King, and all ſtrangers that were his Adherents, and would chooſe another King; The King therefore commands all that were upon Knights-ſervice, and the Nobility to be preſent to fight for him, which they all refuſe to do, whereupon he confiſcated all their Goods, and diſtributed them amongſt thoſe of *Poictou*, and their perſons to be baniſhed, whereſoever they could be found. By vvhich threats they being frighted or corrupted by rewards, the chief of them fall off, whereby the reſt were weakned, and flie into *Wales*, to the Prince of that Countrey *Lionel*, drawn to hold part with them, to whom *Hugh Burgies* came eſcaping out of a Caſtle, where he was unjuſtly impriſoned. The King follows thoſe fugitives into *Wales*, but came back with diſgrace, doing nothing. But *Richard Marſhall* when he would not return into the Kings favour, being drawn cunningly into *Ireland*, to look to his Eſtate, and

there being accuſed of treaſon, was killed, though the King ſtrove to remove the envy of that deed from himſelf.

A Parliament being called, ſome men that had care of the Common-wealth, were thoſe that perſwaded the King to leave off War, and to make Peace with his Nobility; The King hearkned to their Councel, and recalling the Nobles out of *Wales*, he treats with them, whereby they are reſtored to their former Dignities, and ſtrangers that poſſeſſed their places, vvere removed from all places, and a great penalty laid upon them, yet ſome of them (as Fortune is inconſtant) were re-admitted into the Kings favour.

The King then feigning that all favour was for his own Subjects, extorted a great Summe of money from them; which yet he diſtributed amongſt the poor Kindred of the Queen, and her Father a poor Prince: And having promiſed before to exclude all ſtrangers from favour, (and alwayes to take counſel of his Subjects) he began now to eſteem them more; with which indignity the Nobility offended, enter upon a new Conſpiracy, to which, as the Leader and Chief, *Richard* the Kings Brother had given his Name, who being ſo bold as to tell the King of his faults to his teeth, doth forcibly dehort him from ſuch fallacies. The King was much incenſed with this, and ſeeing the Inclination of the *Londoners* towards the Conſpirators, calling a Parliament, and publiſhing the Conditions, he treats with them for Peace. But before it was come ſo far, the Earl of *Cornwall* the Kings Brother was drawn off to the contrary

party whereby the Nobility urged their matters more faintly, and so the Treaty could come to no Conclusion. The King now free from all Impediments, tyrannizeth more over the Nobles; the chief of the Conspirators were banished, or turned out of their Places. Nor did he less oppress the Clergy, putting strangers into Church-Offices, at the Popes request, dispossessing the Nations, and laying heavy Taxes upon them, so that all hated him.

Henry purposing to make a new Expedition for *France*, asks Subsidies from his Parliament, which being denied, he was forced to borrow otherwhere; Nor yet did he spend it successfully, after a years delay, and having done nothing well, concluding a disgracefull Peace with the *French*.

But returning for *England*, he tyrannized over the Jews, and wrested a great Summe of money from them, which he yet consumed with unseasonable Gifts very indiscreetly; And so his Exchequer being consumed, and Subsidies denied him from the Parliament, gave him occasion of new Oppressions, and so drawing the means of the Church to himself, was a cause of great difference between him and the Pope. But the King being inconstant, laid down the Bucklers, and yeelded to the Pope, who recovering his Goods in *England*, did again pole the poor people of the Kingdom with continual sucking.

To this may be added, that there was a daily Conflux out of *France*, and other parts into *England* of this new Family, having some Rela-

tion to the King, this or that way, whose wants must be magnificently supplied, to the great detriment of the Common-wealth. The King grew still poorer by it, and so applied himself to Rapines and Extortions, and sold such Furniture as belonged to the Crown, wresting all the Moneys he could to pay those he stood indebted to.

Then when he could no longer do it by such inconvenient ways, he obtained a small sum of money from the *Londoners*, by threats and violence. And then turning to the Nobility, he asked a Subsidy of them in vain, and he found his Churchmen as backward, with whom he could do little or nothing.

Then enterprizing an Expedition to the holy Land, to free the King of *France*, he called an Assembly of his Bishops and Peers, from whom when he could not obtain one mite of Money, being like a mad man, he drove them all out of the Chamber; The Bishop of *Ely* for that injury was excepted against by him. At last some help was afforded him, whereupon he was forced to confirm solemnly *Magna Charta*, but that Money which he had appointed for the holy Warre was quickly wasted, partly by Gifts, partly by Banquetting, and other Frauds invented for his own destruction. Also he had upon a vain hope redeemed the Kingdoms of *Sicily* for his Son *Edmund*, paying a great summe of Money to the Pope.

In the *interim*, the *Welsh* vexed with great injuries, fall away from the Prince. and to suppress these, and reduce them to Obedience, he stood in need of a new supply of Money, which at last

by

by neat Devices and Inventions he wrung from them.

In the mean while *Richard* Earl of *Cornwall* the Kings Brother, at the ſuit of the Princes of *Germany*, is choſen King of the *Romans*, but ſhortly when he grew inſolent with importunate oppreſſions and revenges, he was put out of the place, and returned for *England* a poor Emperour, who went out a rich Earl.

But *Henry* that he might make up that Money, which the Pope had wiped him of, by a vain boaſt of the Kingdom of *Sicily*, he asks once more a Subſidy from his Nobles, who refuſing ſtifly, and the King preſſing for it, they fall to odds: Afterwards calling a new Parliament, which the Lords had procured for the Safety of the Kingdom, he was compelled by Oath, and his Son alſo to confirm it. At which time it was enacted, That the Kings Brother, with the men of *Poictiers* that remained in *England*, ſhould preſently depart the Kingdom. But a contagious Peſtilence ariſing, either naturally, or by ſome venom, theſe ſtrangers ſcattered when they departed. Many of the Nobility died, whereupon many were put to Death out of bare ſuſpicion, ſome are caſt into Priſon, and ſome are baniſhed. Nor did leſs evils for this afflict the *Engliſh*, for they that had the Charge of Correcting the Errours of others, did with all cruelty weed up the miſerable *Engliſh*, that now ſo many Lords as there were, ſo many Tyrants there were, and the ſervants were grown like their Maſters. And that they might ſtirre up the envy of the Subjects againſt the King, they caſt all the fault upon

upon him, which he endeavoured to free himself from by his publick Writ, but all in vain, when he was compelled in a solemn Parliament to give that Power he had given to twenty four chosen men before, to the Earls *Montfort*, and of *Glocester*, and to *Spencer*, taking an Oath to confirm it unto them.

In the mean while, *Richard* King of the *Romans*, being landed in *England*, *Henry* growing bolder by the return of his Brother, though he were poor, first demands a discharge of his Oath from the Pope, then he opposed himself against the Insolency of the Nobility; He flies to help from the *French* King, who is chosen Umpire between *Henry* and the Nobles, to end the Controversie, but when he did nothing, they break forth on all sides into open Warre. The Count of *Leicester* drives forth the Earl of *Glocester*, and storms his Castle, and laid a great Fine upon the Citizens. Then he took the Fort at *Worcester*, and afterwards the Isle of *Ely*, and the Castle of *Windsor*. But the King fearing least he should come so farre as *London*, thought it concerned him to make Peace with him. They agreed at last on these Conditions, That all the Castles should be delivered up to the Lords, and all strangers at a day appointed, should forthwith depart the Kingdom, onely those excepted who had a Licence given them to stay.

But the King calling a new Parliament, he drew some of the Nobility, especially his own Sons to his Party, to whom *John Comminus*, *Baily*, *Robert Bruse*, and others from *Scotland*, joyn'd themselves: With these, being not a little

con-

confirmed, he denounceth Warre against the Earls of *Leicester* and *Glocester*, who did not at all excuse themselves; who seeing the King daily increase in Forces, levying a sudden, but farre lesse Army, oppose the King: And here Fraud supplied the parts of Vertue, for setting their Banners behinde without Souldiers, they made a shew of a greater Army than they had. And Fortune helped a good Cause, for the Kings Forces being dispersed, the greatest part of them was oppressed and slain, the rest saved themselves by flight: But the King, the Prince, and Earl of *Cornwall*, and his Sonne *Henry*, and all the *Scotch* Nobility fell into the Enemies hands.

There had been an end of the King and his Fortune, least a Contention arising between the Earls of *Leicester* and *Glocester*, had given cause to a hot Contest, and afterwards to a sharp Warre, where *Leicester* being too weak, yet fell valiantly with wonderfull glory.

By the same Fortune, *Simon* and *Guido Montforts*, the Sons of the Earl of *Leicester*, were banished, one into *Italy*, the other into *France*, where afterwards they gave their name to most Illustrious Families. Also their Mother a gallant woman, being gone a little before into *France*, ended her Life in a Nunnery.

A new Contention being risen amongst the Nobles, they sound the Trumpet to Battel again; Also the *Welsh* who had helped Earl *Montfort*, are remanded to be slain. But Peace being confirmed on all sides, this trouble abated without blood.

Rest

Rest gave obtained at home, *Edward* Prince of *Wales*, at the request of the *French* King, goes forth toward the Warre in *Palestina*: But *Richard* once King of the *Romans* died in the mean time, whom *Henry* himself followed shortly after, (whilst he studied to repair the losses he sustained by War.) having Raigned 56 years, and was buried at *Westminster*.

Edward the First, King of England.

Edwardus I. D. G. Rex Ang: Dux Aquit: etc Dom: Hib:

Anno 1272.

WHen *Henry* died, *Edward* ſtayed in *Paleſtina*, being intent about the holy Warre, where he underwent a grievous danger, having received three wounds from his adverſary with a poiſoned weapon. But he was cured by the wonderfull Piety of his Wife, who with her mouth in time ſucked out the venom from

from the wounds. In his way, being made more certain of his Fathers death, he came at last over-land into his Countrey, and was inaugurated King.

At the beginning of his Reign he used the Nobility well; but he to abate the insolence of the Clergie, commanded their wealth to be brought into his Exchequer, and he afflicted them by other means, and so drew upon him their envy. The *Welsh*, whose custom it was on all occasions to make new Commotions, now afresh under their Leader *Lionel*, rise up against *Edward*, and rage with wonderfull pride, but this tempest soon vanished, for *Eleoner* the Daughter of *Simon Montfort*, espoused to *Lionel*, whilst she came out of *France* by Sea to her Husband, was taken in the way, whom he was forced to redeem at a great ransom, promising also to *Edward* continual Homage, and granting his Brother *David* to the *English*, who was highly esteemed by *Edward*. But *Lionels* obedience lasted not above three years, for his Wife *Eleoner* being dead, he breaks forth into new rebellions. Also *David* forgetting the great love of King *Edward* to him, fell off presently to his Brother, and so with joynt Forces they enter *England*, and did some mischief to *Edward*; both wonderfull inflamed by a false Propheſi of *Merlin*, whereby the Crown of *Britain* was promised to *Lionel*; But the Battel being set, *Lionel* was killed by a private Souldier, and his Head was brought to the King, who caused it to be fastened on a Pole, and to be Crowned with joy, and set up on the Tower of *London*. The lot of *David* was like to his Brothers,

thers, who being taken in *Wales*, was drawn with a Horse to the place of Execution, and there beheaded, and his Head set by his Brothers, and his four quarters were sent to the four principal Cities of *England*. So *Edward* revenged the Rebellion of the *Welch*, and the death of *Alphonsus* his first-born, who was killed in the same Battel.

But a greater cloud hung over his head from *Scotland*, for *Alexander* the third, King of *Scotland*, whilst he rode the Great Horse, fell with him, and so died, leaving his Daughter *Margaret* to inherit; but she, shortly after her Father, died also, leaving the Kingdom to ten Corrivals who strove for it. *Edward* was chosen Umpire by them all to search their Titles; but he reduced all their pretences to two especially, namely, *John Baily* and *Robert Bruse*, who with equal right affected the Kingdom; whilst the matter rests between them, *Edward* sets on *Bruse*, promising to him the Kingdom of *Scotland* for ever, so he would do him Homage for it. But *Bruse* refused it, preferring his Countries Liberty before his own Honour; but *Baily* yielded to those conditions, and so gained the Kingdom of *Scotland*, but thrust with of all his Countrey-men. Envy against him increased for refusing justice upon the death of the Earl of *Fife*, who was slain, for *Baily* exempted *Albemeth* that slew him from punishment; whereupon *Baily* was cited to appear before *Edwards* Tribunal, was forced to plead his cause. He was angry for his disgrace, and returns to his Kingdom, and afterwards denied Homage to *Edward*, and proclaimed Warre,

making

making a Covenant with the *French* King. Hence aroſe the cauſe of a moſt bloody Warre between the two Nations, which laſted for 300 years, only ſome feigned ceſſations paſſing between.

Armies are Muſtered on both ſides, and the *Engliſh* giving the firſt onſet on the *Scotch*, ſlew abundance of them, and won many Cities and Caſtles; by which loſs *Bruſius* was conſtrained to beg for Peace, which was granted, but he himſelf was carried Captive into *England*, and being afterwards ſet at liberty, he ended his dayes in *France*, expecting in vain the reſtitution of his goods. And ſo *Edward* returned for *England*, leaving after him *John Waramius* Earl of *Suſſex* his Embaſſador, and *Hugh Chryſingamius* his Treaſurer, to take care of the *Scotch* buſineſs. But a little after this, the *Scotch*, when the King was gone into *France*, making head againſt the Kings Miniſters, having *William Valla* for their Captain, they killed *Hugh Chryſingamius*, and with him 6000 *Engliſh*. But the King came back for *England*, commanded that his Court ſhould be held at *Yorke*; and preſently levying an Army, he aſſaulted the *Scotch* afreſh at *Foukirk*, and though he himſelf were diſmounted from his Horſe, that was frighted with the hollow of the enemy, and was dangerouſly wounded, two ribs being broken in his body, yet he made a great ſlaughter amongſt them, 40000 Horſe and Foot of them being ſlain; Only *Valla* with a ſmall handful of men eſcaped by flight from the fury of the enemy. All the Noble mens goods are made forfeit to the *Engliſh*,

and they were all made Tributaries, and to ſwear the third time to be true to King *Edward*.

But the falſe *Scot* kept his word but a very ſhort time, for *Bruſius* the Son of *Robert* being made King in a Turbulent manner, new commotions ariſe, for he fearing the power of *John Cominus*, cauſed him wickedly to be murdered in the Temple of *Dumfriſe*. When *Edward* heard this, he vvas wonderfully incenſed: Preſently having raiſed a gallant Army he marcheth into *Scotland*, not meaning to ceaſe, till he had brought down the uſurper of that Kingdom. The Earl of *Pembroke*, who was marched before vvith his Brigade, lighting ſuddenly on *Bruſe*, deſtroyed all his men, from whoſe hands the King himſelf hardly eſcaped, he led a diſhonourable life in Caves, Dens, and Crags of Mountains, ſeeking his fortune in other matters. His Brothers falling into the power of the enemy, were put to extream tortures as Traytors.

The King fierce with the madneſs of Revenge, ſpared no mans life, but ſlew all he met withal. The Earl of *Athol* alſo, though he were of the Kings blood, vvas ſent to *London*, and hanged there: ſo and by ſuch like wayes were the followers of *Bruſe* puniſhed. Yet *Bruſe*, though he vvanted almoſt any to follow him, did not give out, but collecting a handfull of Souldiers, he ſets upon the Earl of *Pembroke* ſuddainly, and put him to the worſt with great loſs and ſlaughter, and he drove the Earl of *Gloceſter* into the Caſtle of *Ayrs*, and beſieged him there, until *Edward* coming to his relief, he was forced to fly to his old ſculking holes.

In

In the mean time a new Warre breaks forth with the *French* King *Philip* the Fair, by a controverſie between the ſubjects of either King, and ariſing from pretended injury; for Kings that envy one the other do eaſily break into open hatred. The King of *England* alſo was juſtly angry, and ſought all occaſions of wrong greedily, by reaſon that *Henry* his Couſin, Son to *Richard* the Emperour, was killed by the Earl *Montforts* Son, at which wickedneſs the *French* connived. In a fight at Sea firſt a great deſtruction was brought upon the *French* at the entrance of the River *Sion* and elſewhere. And *Edward* when a day was appointed for him as a ſtipendary to plead his cauſe before King *Philip*, he refuſed to appear, and the Homage he did willingly before, he now refuſed to do; vvhereupon a great Army being raiſed, *Philip* enters upon the Territories of *Edward* in *France* by force of Arms. The King of *England*, by the aſſiſtance of neighbour Princes, the Earl of *Flanders*, the Duke of *Brabant*, and others, to which was joyned the help that came from *Adolphus* of *Naſſaw* the *Roman* Emperour, who had promiſed it, preſently marched againſt the King of *France*, but finding the *French* divided into parts, and defrauded of the aſſiſtance promiſed them by the Emperour, when he had held his Winter Quarters at *Gaunt*, not without murmuring of the Citizens, and great want amongſt his Souldiers; at the beginning of the Spring, truce being made with the *French* for three years, the King took *Margaret* the Dukes ſiſter to Wife (for *Leoner* died in the former expedition againſt the *Scot*) and the Daughter

of *Philip* being betrothed to King *Edwards* Son, he retreated for *England*.

Laſtly, making his incurſion into *Scotland*, when he held his Winter-Quarters at *Carlile*, where being taken with a Dyſentery in the way, and the diſeaſe increaſing, he died at *Burgh* upon ſands, when he had reigned thirty four years, and lyeth buried at *Weſtminſter*.

He was taller then all the reſt, of a ſorrowfull countenance, for chaſtity like to his Father, but in fortitude far before him; he was excellent for Judgement and Continence.

EDVVARD *the Second, King of* England.

Edwardus II. D. G. Rex Ang: Dux Aquit: etc. Dom: Hib:

Anno 1308.

EDward ſirnamed *Carnarvan*, by ſucceſſion came to the Throne when his Father was dead. But he at the very beginning ſhewed what his future Tyranny would be, eſpecially in turning upſide down what his Father had left in command by his Will; and calling *Gaveſtone* from baniſhment, a young man of a moſt baſe

life, who for his insolency was exiled by his Fathers order, and in his last words forbad him not to recall him, who afterwards gave cause of great dissentions; for when the King bestowed inconsiderate gifts upon him, he made the Nobility envious against him, and himself more. For his Father being yet not interred, he endeavoured to conclude the Matrimony with King *Philips* Daughter, that was contracted when King *Edward* lived, which is performed with great preparation of the Nobles, and especially of *Gaveston*, four Kings being present, and three Queens except the Bride. The Dowry was the Dukedom of *Aquitan*, which the *French* King had possessed himself of. But he being returned into *England*, the Nobles were offended by reason of the too great power of *Gaveston*, they deny the solemnity of the Coronation, unless he would banish this insolent odious man from his Court and Kingdom. The King seemed to hearken to it, and so is inaugurated with his Queen in the Kingdom by the consent of all. But when as he should banish *Gaveston*, he highly promoted him, the Nobility not a little murmuring at it.

In the mean while the chief power was in *Gaveston*, the Nobles had no authority; and that he might precede the rest in glory, a Tilting was appointed, where he obtained the greatest praise. His valour was worthy of reward, but that the insolent man turned all to the contempt of the Nobility. In the mean while a Parliament was called, wherein, amongst the rest, it was Enacted, That the Decrees of *Magna Charta* should

ſhould be obſerved; Strangers ſhould be put out of their Offices, and that all things ſhould be done in a ſolemn ſitting of the Senate, nor ſhould the King go out of the Land, the Parliament being ignorant of it, or againſt it, nor ſhould make Warre againſt any, and that *Gaveſtone* ſhould be baniſhed.

Whereupon he is ſent away for *Ireland*, not as a baniſhed man, but as Preſident of the Iſland, vvhere alſo behaving himſelf vvell he had deſerved commendation and reward. But the King by prepoſterous counſell, a contract being made for him with the ſiſter of the Earl of *Gloceſter*, being impatient of his abſence, called him back from his baniſhment, and preſently ſettled him in his former grace and favour. But he to give the King thanks, by cunning flattery, ſucked the King of all he had, that he left him ſcarce ſufficient for his neceſſity. The Nobles in the mean while hating his inſolency, threaten a general revolt from the King, unleſs he vvould ſend away his proud ſubject. But *Gaveſtone*, when he had wandred ſome time in *France* and *Flanders*, returns privately into *England*, being generally hated, being the more confident by reaſon of the Kings and his Father in Law the Earl of *Gloceſters* favour. The King received him moſt friendly, and that his arrival might be concealed from the Nobles, the King takes a journey with him toward *York*. The Nobility that had knowledge of it enter a Conſpiracy, to which all ſubſcribed but the Earl of *Gloceſter*: And they make *Thomas* Earl of *Lancaſter* the head of the faction; and ſo they laid a neceſſity on the King, either to

deliver up *Gaveſton* into the hands of the Lords, or elſe to ſend him out of the Land. But *Edward* being blinde vvith fooliſh favour, would not hearken to the Lords, but ſhut him up in a ſtrong Caſtle, that ſo he might eſcape the envy of the Nobility. But they being ſworn together, beſiege the place, and compell him to ſurrender miſerably, and having taken him they cut off his head. Three things were left in charge to *Edward* by his dying Father, and vvere commanded in his Will, namely, That he ſhould carry his Fathers bones along with him, till he had conquered *Scotland*: That he ſhould expend 30000lb upon the holy Warre: And that he ſhould not recal *Gaveſton*. He obeyed not the two latter, for that money decreed for the Holy Warre he beſtowed on *Gaveſton* when he was come back, for the third we ſhall ſee what he did. The King of *Scots Bruſius*, who had long ſince intelligence of King *Edwards* ſlothfulneſs, would not paſs over ſuch an opportunity of well managing his buſineſs, levying an Army, preſently reduced all *Scotland* into his power. And not therewith content, he enters the borders of *England*, and deſtroys all by fire and ſword. *Edward* to repulſe force by force, raiſed an Army of an hundred thouſand Souldiers, better fitted with furniture than valour, which was eaſily vanquiſhed by the *Scotch*, that were ſcarce 30000, joyning craft and valour together. The chief of the Nobility in this fight were either ſlain or taken Captives. The Earl of *Gloceſter* himſelf, when he had given ſufficient tokens of his fortitude, fighting valiantly in the head of the Army, was killed,

killed, the reſt ſaved themſelves by flight. This made the hearts of the *Engliſh* to fail, and a great part of the Noble and Commons revolted to the Conquerours, by a fearful example of perjury puniſhed. *Bruſe* following his Victories, enters upon *Ireland* with an Army, a great part of it he over-runne, and depopulated it very farre: Alſo he was ſaluted King of the ſame Iſland, the inhabitants falling to him abundantly. And he ruled three years, untill the Primate of *Armath*, and *Berningam* the chief Judge in *Ireland*, raiſing a great Army, ſet upon the Conquerour, and take him with a greater ſlaughter of his men, and cut off his Head. The *Scots* almoſt mad with the death of their King, waſte the Borders of *England*, ſo farre as *York* with ſword and fire. To moderate their Inſolence, a great Army was raiſed of the *Engliſh*, who marched toward *York*. But diſcord growing between the Commanders, before they ſaw the enemy, they either ſlipt away, or returned home. Then *Barwick* by the Treaſon of *Peter Spalding* was delivered up to the Enemies hands, which *Edward* preſently laid ſiege to. But the Earl of *Lancaſter* falling away with his men, by reaſon of a quarrel, the *Scotch* in the mean time making havock of all, and conquering divers Cities and Caſtles, he was forward to retreat. To this it fell out that the *Yorkſhire* men raiſing a great power of the common people, and ſetting upon the *Scots*, were unhappily beaten and killed by them. The King removing his ſiege from *Barwick*, following the *Scots* that were laden with the prey, and the ſpoil, but he was fruſtrated of his end.

they

they having marched another way. The next year entring *Scotland*, becauſe the Enemy had waſted all before his coming, by reaſon of hunger and want, was compelled to return back again. But the *Scotch* following him, and coming ſuddenly upon him, he ſuffered a great loſſe, and hardly eſcaped himſelf, and ſo finding himſelf too weak for the Enemy, he begged a Truce for two yeares. But he was vexed with far greater troubles than theſe at home; For *Gaveſton* being dead, the younger *Spencer* ſucceeded in the Kings Grace and Favour, vvho after he had obtained the Government of the Common-wealth in as high a manner as *Gaveſton* had, he could not chooſe but fall under the ſame malice of the Nobility. But the cover of this envy was too unjuſt that it could be hid by a publick conteſt, ſome other occaſion muſt be ſought for. They all with one conſent ask of the King, that he would keep entire the Conditions formerly granted, threatning him with a revolt, and ſo they raiſe great Forces for War, but the Prelates interpoſing, they made Peace on both parts.

But ſhortly after a Parliament being called, the King complains openly of the wrong they had done him, and of *Gaveſtons* death; But the Nobility ſay they had committed no ſinne in ſo doing, but growing remorſe by the admonitions of the Queen, and the Earl of *Gloceſter*, they ask pardon of the King upon their knees; They eaſily obtain'd it, which was granted to them under the Kings Broad-Seal.

Now all the diſſention ſeemed to be laid aſleep, but as fire raked up in aſhes, is kindled by

by any little winde, ſometimes into a great flame, ſo there needed but a ſmall blaſt to produce the former troubles. The firſt occaſion of defection was given, becauſe the wife of the Earl of *Leiceſter*, with which he had a long time lived quietly, was taken from him vvith the Counties of *Lincoln* and *Salisbury*, by *Richard Sanmartin* a very deformed man, who ſaid he had conjugal cuſtom with her before, which thing ſhe openly confeſſed when ſhe was demanded concerning it. Another occaſion was given, when at *Whitſontide* a certain woman riding ridiculouſly on horſeback in fools habit, did go into the Court and upbraid the King with his ingratitude toward his faithful Miniſters. A third, when a certain Knight that had a packet of the Kings was intercepted, wherein was written a deſire to the King of *Scots* to cut off the Earl of *Lancaſter*, whereupon not a few fell from the King to that Earl. A fourth, when a certain mad man *John Pondras* counterfeiting himſelf to be King *Edward*, and feared not to ſay, that *Edward* they miſtook for their King was falſly ſuppoſed to be ſo, which madneſſe he paid dearly for by the torture he was put to. But the greateſt of all was, that a certain Baron, *William Breviſius*, who had ſpent the greateſt part of his Eſtate in Riot and Whoring, would needs ſell the reſt by Port ſale, which *Humphrey Bohun* gaping after, asking leave of the King, did tranſact vvith *William* for them. Alſo both the *Roger Mortimers* being ignorant of other Competitours, cheapned the Bargain, and *Spencer* had obtained immediate leave from the King to buy them,

and

and was preferred before any other. It is a wonder what hatred he drew upon himself by this matter. Now all the Nobility came together, and entred a conspiracy, crying out, that the *Spencers* both Father and Sonne were Traitors, Corrupters of the King, and plagues to the Common-wealth, and at last they fell to their Arms. They come in haste to *London* with their Army, and with leave granted, they enter the City, and make their complaints to the King, which he yeelded to by the Intercession of many. Lastly, The *Spencers* were banished, but shortly after, when the Archbishop of *Canterbury* contended in a Common-Councel of a *London*-Senate, that that banishment was unjust, the *Spencers* are called home again, the King being no wayes unwilling to it. This drove the Nobility on, but another mischief moved the King. For the Queen taking her Progress toward *Canterbury*, when as she would have diverted towards the Lord of *Baldesmire*, she was dishonourably shut out, and was forced to turn away to some other place. Of which matter she complained to the King, and it made him extream angry, who now doth think of nothing but revenge for that injury, collecting suddainly a Band of Souldiers, he assaulted that Castle, which when he had overcome, the Governour of it *Thomas Culpeper*, was hanged, and *Baldesmire* with his wife and children was cast into Prison, and all his goods Confiscate. And the Kings blood being now hot, he proceeded farther, and resolved to make Warre upon the Nobles, but they finding that his Army increased, part returned to their Obedience,

ence, and part fell to their Arms; But their Army being either ſlipt away or vanquiſhed, ſome were killed in the fight, the reſt were taken, amongſt whom was the Earl of *Lancaſter*, who was beheaded before his own Caſtle, the reſt were either hanged or beheaded, that *England* was never more ſorrowfully wet with Noble Blood.

Now the laſt and worſt miſchief of all hanged over his head, for the King of *France* for the Poſſeſſions that *Edward* had in *France*, required Homage from him for them, but *Edward* refuſing, he entr'd his Provinces with an Army. At length Queen *Iſabella*, *Edwards* wife was ſent to intreat him not to waſte his Countrey: ſhe went willingly, partly to performe the Kings Commands, partly to complain to her Brother. For *Edward* by the Inſtigation of *Spencer* was no little eſtranged from her, and had offended her with great contempt. *Roger Mortimer* went with her, with whom the Queen held unlawfull Familiarity, vvhich when the King underſtood, he ſent to the *French* King ſome that ſhould deſire him to ſend home the Queen with the Prince her Sonne. But ſhe not returning is baniſhed out of all the Kings Dominions, and Garriſons made to drive her off, if ſhe came againſt the Kings Will. But ſhe flying to the Earl of *Hannonia*, Matrimony being contracted between Prince *Edward*, and the Earls Sonne, ſhe procured a good Army from him, *John* the Earls Brother being Generall; Setting ſail they land about *Harwich*, to vvhom immediately *Henry* Earl of *Lancaſter*, and other Nobles joyned themſelves. The King receiving

news

news of it, was wonderfully frighted, he left *London* without ſtay, the City being addicted to the Queen, and purpoſing to flie into *Lundy* Iſland, by a Tempeſt he was driven into *Wales*. In the mean while the *Londoners*, that they might ſhew their loves to the Queen, cut off the Heads of *Gualter Stapleton* Treaſurer of *England* moſt cruelly, becauſe he was addicted to the King, and ſome others alſo. Nor did the Queen do leſs at *Briſtol*, killing *Hugh* Father to *Spencer*, who was ninety years old, cauſing him to be dragged to Execution, pulling his heart out alive. Then ſhe ſent part of her Army to finde out the King, *Henry* Earl of *Lancaſter* being the chief, and *Rice Paulinus* a *Welſhman*, who becauſe he knew every paſſage of the Countrey exactly, he lead the Earl to the Monaſtery of *Neth*, where the King hid himſelf, where preſently both he, with *Spencer*, *Robert Baldoch*, and *Simon Redying*, is delivered into the hands of his Enemies, and is left to the Cuſtody of the Earl of *Leiceſter*, who entertained him with all reſpect, as it was fit a captive King ſhould be. But *Edmund* Earl of *Arundel*, *John Daniel* and *Thomas Micheldem*, are beheaded at the requeſt of *Mortimer*. But *Spencer* vvho was now Earl of *Gloceſter*, is now with *Simon Redyng* drawn to Execution, and being firſt hanged, they were afterwards beheaded and quartered, and their heads ſet up on *London* Bridge, the quarters were ſent to the chief Cities, but *Baldoch* was famiſhed to death in Priſon. Then a Parliament is called, vvherein they conſulted to depoſe the King, and to Crown the Prince his Sonne *Edward*. But he being

being farre more Religious than his Mother, would not accept the Crown, unleſs his Father vvould reſign it willingly. Some are ſent to perſwade this miſerable King, and the unhappy man did yeeld eaſily to it. A day is ſet for the delivering up his Title, and *Edward* cloathed in black, comes into the Chamber, where they were gathered together that ſhould receive his Abdication, but he ſcarce ſaw the proviſion made for his renunciation, but he ſunk down half dead in a ſwound, and with much ado being refreſhed by the Earl of *Leiceſter*, and the Biſhop of *Winchester*, he came to himſelf. But when he heard the cauſe of the Aſſembly, he anſwered, That as it was diſpleaſing to him that his Subjects were ſo much offended at him, ſo he was vvell pleaſed that they had made his Son *Edward* King in his ſtead; and ſo the Solemnities being rightly performed, the buſineſs was at laſt accompliſhed. Then an allowance being granted to *Edward*, he remained in the Cuſtody of the Earl of *Leiceſter*, and was well uſed. Alſo ſo great a ſtipend vvas granted to the Queen-Mother, that there was ſcarce any thing left for the King and Queen. Nor was the furious woman yet pleaſed, but went about to infringe the Liberty her Husband enjoyed with the Earl of *Leiceſter*, and by the counſel of *Adam Torleton* Biſhop of *Hereford*, power is granted to two Knights *Thomas Gorney* and *John Matrevers* to carry the King to ſome other place. They hewed him filthily, cutting his hair moſt ridiculouſly, and his beard alſo, that he might not be known, at laſt they brought him to *Barclay* Caſtle.

After

After he had loſt his Kingdom, they conſult concerning his Life. Firſt, They thought by unwholſome food to deſtroy him, then by filthy ſtinks of carcaſes, and laſtly by poyſon, but neither prevailed. Then the Letters of the Biſhop of *Hereford* the moſt wicked Counſellour, were ſent to his Keepers, by which he checks them heavily for dealing ſo well with him that was not fit to be ſo kindly uſed, adding in the end, *Doe not feare to kill* Edward, *'tis good*; which was interpreted by them, as they pleaſed, who thereupon fell upon the miſerable King in his Bed, and ſtrive with the Blankets to ſtrangle him. Nor were they content with this, but they thruſt a hot Iron into his Fundament, and ſo burned his Bowels (a moſt hideous Example of Cruelty) and deſtroyed him in a dolefull manner. But theſe Parricides when they looked for a Reward for their Villany, they received a juſt Reward of it; For being called in queſtion for their Lives, they were baniſhed. Afterwards *Gorney* loſt his Head, *Matrevers* after a long baniſhment at laſt died miſerably.

This King vvas of an excellent Stature of Body, wonderfull ſtrong, but too much given to drunkenneſs, and ſo not ſecret of his Counſels; he was immoderate toward thoſe he loved; For Love, if it be with Moderation is a moſt noble affection of the ſoul, and if that be wanting, it is the worſt paſſion of all the reſt. He was more unhappy than unfortunate. He exceeded all in Chaſtity, for he left no Baſtards behind him; In Moderation, for he uſed no unjuſt

unjust wayes to pole his Subjects of their Moneys. As his Subjects hated him in his life time, so his memory was dear unto them after his Death.

Edward the Third, King of England and France.

Edwardus III. D. G. Rex Ang: Fran: et Dom: Hib: &c.

Anno 1328.

His Father being depoſed, *Edward* was ſaluted King, ſirnamed *Windſor*, not yet having paſſed his fifteenth year, and therefore he had Governours that ſhould rule the Kingdome in his Name. But the chief Power remain'd in the Queen and *Mortimer*, either the Nobi-

Nobility winking at it, or allowing it. The firſt care was to fall upon the *Scotch*, for *Robert Bruſe* deſpiſing the young King, entred the Borders of *England* vvith his Army, vvhereupon an Army is raiſed, joyning thoſe of the hanſe Towns, which the Queen brought with her. But when divers people hardly could be held together in reſpect of the diverſity of their Manners, there grew in a ſhort time a great diſcord between both Nations; ſo nothing ſucceeding well, they came back again, and afterwards the *Engliſh* conſented to baſe conditions of Peace; A Marriage being contracted between *David* Prince of *Scotland*, and *Joan* Siſter to *Edward*. Alſo *Edward* Married his Wife that was promiſed him, *Philippa* the Earl of *Hannonia's* Daughter, being yet in their Nonage. Then the Souldiers of *Hannonia*, who cauſed the Diſcord, are ſent home, And *Edmund* Earl of *Kent* accuſed of Treaſon, becauſe he had endeavoured to reſtore the Kingdom to his Brother *Edward*, was condemned, and loſt his Head. But the great Revenues of the Queen, which ſhe had drawn to her ſelf by a Grant of Parliament were reſtrained to a thouſand *per annum*, and ſhe was impriſoned in a Caſtle; and *Mortimer* being convicted of Adultery with her, and being taken in the act, was preſently hanged: In the mean while *Philip* the Fair King of *France* died, and the Kingdom was devolved to his Sonnes, *Henry*, *Lewis*, and *Charles* the Fair, who all reigned in their turns, but *Charles* dying vvithout an Heir-male, lawful Succeſſion failed in him. *Edward* vvho was of kinne by the Siſter of *Charles*, vvho was

the Daughter to *Philip* the Fair, ſuppoſing tha the Kingdom fell by deſcent to him, found *Philip Valeſius*, Brother to *Philip* the Fair to be his enemy, for women by the common rule of *France* are excluded by the Salique Law. Wherefore *Philip* was prefer'd before *Edward*, and the King of *England* was forced to do him Homage for the Lands he poſſeſſed in *France*. But theſe things gave cauſe afterwards for a grievous Warre and ſharp contention.

In the mean time *Edward Baily* Son to *John*, affecting the Kingdom of *Scotland*, deſcending from his Anceſtors, *Robert Bruſe* being novv dead, made Warre upon the *Scots*, and by a ſucceſsfull fight (or elſe helped by the Forces of *Edward*) brought almoſt the whole Nation under him (whilſt *David* a young King trifled the time away in *France*) and ſo doing Homage to the King of *England*, he held it as from him in Chief.

In the ſaid time the Iſle of *Man* is Conquered by *William Montacute* Earl of *Salisbury*, vvho therefore was honoured vvith the Title of King of *Man*.

Edward now come to age, by the Inſtigation of *Robert Atrebas*, who was fled out of *France* into *England*, intends a Warre vvith *France*, making a Confederacy vvith the Dukes and Earls of *Gelderland*, *Gulic*, *Cleave*, and the Hanſe-Towns, and of *Brabant*. The *French* alſo foreſeeing this Tempeſt, made friendſhip with the Biſhop of *Leige*, *John* King of *Bohemia*, the Earl of *Lutzenburg*, the Palatine *Albertus*, *Otho* of the Houſe of *Auſtrich*, and *Ameſius* Earl of *Genoa*.

Where-

Wherefore *Edward* ſail'd into *Flanders*, bearing the Title of the King of *France* (thoſe of *Flanders* being the cauſe of it) and then he entred the Borders of *France*. *Philip* alſo invaded *Aquitan*, and though the Armies of both Kings were in ſight one of the other, and ready to fall on, yet they both departed without fighting. *Edward* in the mean while to ſee to his buſineſs at home, returned for *England*, leaving *William Montacute*, and the Earl of *Suffolk* to take care of the Warre, both of them behaved themſelves valiantly, yet were taken and brought to *Paris*.

But *Edward* ſuppoſing it was in vain to ſtay at the report of this news, provided for his return for *France*, and finding a ſtrong Navy of King *Philips* in the Haven of *Sluſe*, he collecting a great Fleet ſet upon the *French*, and utterly deſtroyed their Navy, killing then 30000 *French*, with thoſe that were drowned and came to their ends other wayes.

Then he laid ſiege to *Tourney*, which Town was ſo well defended by the Duke of *Burgundy*, and the Earl of *Armeniac*, that his whole Army being diſperſed, he loſt about 4000 men, *Edward* was much enraged with this loſs, and challenged *Philip* to fight a Duel with him, but the buſineſs came not ſo far, becauſe it was taken up.

Yet the beſieging of *Tourney* was no whit neglected, and *Philip* did what he could to free the City, but *Robert* King of *Sicily* interceding, and eſpecially *Joan Valois*, *Philips* ſiſter, there is a ceſſation made for two years.

In the *interim* the *Scots* that were enemies to

Bayly's Government, calling their King *David* out of *France*, they make War upon *Edward*, and invading *Northumberland* with a ſtrong Army, they miſerably deſtroy all by fire and ſword, ſparing no ſex nor condition. But at the ſudden approach of *William Montacute*, they are afflicted with ſome loſs, and being frighted at the coming of *Edward*, ſounding a retreat, they returned for *Scotland*, but *Edward* following their Armies overtook them, and wearying them with ſome light skirmiſhes, he forced them to a ceſſation for two years.

John Earl *Montfort*, whilſt he ſtrives to make good his Title to *Britany*, is taken by King *Philip*: but his Wife ſeeking help from King *Edward*, eaſily procured it (*Mary* the Kings Daughter being eſpouſed to the Earls Son) the care of that expedition vvas firſt committed to *Gualter Mani* a valiant Gentleman, and then to *Robert Atrebas*. In the mean time *Baily* being driven out of his Kingdom of *Scotland*, and by *Edward* made Governour of *Barwick*, tels *Edward* that the *Scots* had not kept their Covenants; vvhereupon *Edward* moves ſuddenly with an Army againſt the *Scots*, but there was nothing done but the ceſſation of Arms renewed.

In the *interim*, *Robert Atrebas*, with *Gualter Mani*, and ſome other Nobles, after a great tempeſt, and Sea-fight, arrived at a Town of *Britain* (which is commonly called *Vannes*) and going on Land, ſet on the City that was a Garriſon in a Hoſtile manner, and ſuddainly became Maſters of it; but by the deſperate violence of ſome of the Nobility, the *French* wan

wan it again, and wounded *Robert*, vvhereof he died ſhortly after in *England*. But *Edward* himſelf moving into *Britany*, laid a new ſiege to the *Vannes*; and *John* Duke of *Normandy* coming ſuddenly, they both make themſelves ready for Battel, but by the intereceſſion of Pope *Clement* the ſixt, Truce was made for ſome few moneths, yet it laſted not, who was the cauſe of it is uncertain; they again prepare for their Arms, by which means *Henry* of *Lancaſter* ſubdued many Towns in *Guyan*, and in other Provinces, and then he removed to *Bourdeaux* for his Winter Quarters.

Philip that he might not loſe his Countrey by ſloth, levying a great Army, regained *Miremontium* a *Franc Town*, and *Engoleſm*. But when *Lancaſter* was too weak for the great Army of *Philip*, *Edward* came to his aſſiſtance with more Forces, bringing with him his Son Prince of *Wales*, that was yet in his Non-age (for he was ſcarce 15 years old) that he might be trained up in the Warres, who preſently took many Towns, and then he marched toward *Picardy* and *Pontium*, and he either vanquiſhed or deſtroyed all places in the way. Then he paſſed over *Somes*, a wonderfull example of his Valour, the enemy looking on, and he diſcomfited *Gondomar* more by fear than force.

In the mean time *Philip* ſtay'd with his Army at the Temple of St *Germans*, and being enraged with ſo great a loſs of his men, ſets *Edward* a day to fight with him in Battell; he had pitched his Camp at *Creſſen*, expecting with his Enſignes *Philip* his enemy: The Armies both

meet, and the Trumpets ſound to Battel, wherein appeared the wonderfull courage of *Edwards* both Father and Sonne, that day the *Engliſh* got the Victory, and the *French* were routed and ruined, the King hardly eſcaped himſelf, and there were found ſlain about 30000 men, the chief whereof were *John* King of *Bohemia*, *Charles Alencon*, and other chief Nobles 1500. Another loſs fell after this Victory, upon the Archbiſhop of *Roan*, who loſt about 7000 Souldiers.

Nor was this the end of their Victories, for it went ſucceſſively in *England* againſt the *Scots* in the Kings abſence, their King *David* with the greateſt Noble men were taken priſoners, and 15000 Souldiers were ſlain in the fight, and the reſt were diſperſed.

Nor did the General *Thomas Dagworth* fight with leſs good fortune in *Britany*, for the Counteſs of *Montfort*; the principal of the *French* Nobility being taken and killed.

Edward being more high by ſo many and great Victories, neglecting *Amiens* and the Town of *Abbas*, he laid ſiege to *Calais*, that was of great moment, and moſt convenient for the *Engliſh* affairs, whilſt *Lancaſter* overran all *Guyan*, vanquiſhed thoſe of *Xanton* and *Poictiers*, and being loaded with the ſpoil, he returned to *Bourdeaux*. In the mean while *Philip* going about to relieve thoſe of *Calais*, drew near with his Forces, and when he had in vain provoked *Edward* to Battel, having done nothing, he returns toward *Paris*: So they of *Calais* being out of hopes of relief, began to treat for Conditions, and it was agreed upon

on

on both ſides, that ſix of the principal Citizens, ſhould come vvith nothing on but their ſhirts, with Halters about their necks, and ſubmit themſelves to King *Edward*, all the reſt to have free pardon. Theſe, though they did moſt humbly upon their knees crave for pardon, yet were condemned to be hanged, but at the Queens requeſt they were ſet at liberty, and ſent away with money to defray their charges as they went.

The King and Queen enter the City in Triumph, they command the old Inhabitants to leave the City, and kept the place ſtocked with *Engliſh* families.

The *French* ſtrive to regain by craft vvhat they had loſt by Valour, for *Godfrey Charnus* the Governour of St *Odomar*, had corrupted vvith money *Almeric Papienſis*, which *Edward* had made Captain of *Calais*, to deliver up the City, but the matter being diſcloſed, *Almeric* is called for into *England*, vvho coming, and confeſſing his fault, at laſt he obtained pardon, but upon that condition that he ſhould deceive the *French* of their expectation, and deliver them up to the hands of the *Engliſh*. At the time appointed came *Charnus*, and brought the Gold with him he had promiſed, but he was circumvented by *Edward's* Forces; yet he ſtoutly defended himſelf, and made work enough for *Edward* and his Sonne both, that were preſent untill all were ſlain that he brought with him, and he (with a Cavalier of *Ribomantium*, who had twice diſmounted *Edward*, but at laſt was vanquiſhed by him) was taken priſoner.

But the buſineſs ſucceeded more happily, for the

the *English* got the Castle of *Guyan* by bribing the Governour, and so plaid the *French* the same trick.

Philip the *French* King now dyed, leaving his Sonne *John* Heir of the Kingdom, also *Humbert* Prince of *Dauphine* died, who left the same succeſſour, and from that time the first born of the *French* King is called the *Dolphine.*

But when the Treaties of Peace began, succeeded not, *Edward* Prince of *Wales* is sent again into *France*, who over-running *Aquitan*, *Septimania*, *Tolouſe*, *Narbon*, *Bourges*; heavy with the spoil came back to *Bourdeaux*. *Edward* no leſs on the other part vexed *France* with new Forces; also he set *Lancaſter* to assist the King of *Navarre*, who also Conquered many Castles and Cities, wherefore the *French* man raising what Forces he could, first laies hold on *Normandy*, and recovered many Towns there, and had won all the Province, unleſs he had been diverted by the insolency of *Edward* Prince of *Wales*, who came against him, but when *Edward* was too weak for the *French* Army, he soon retreated to *Burdeaux*. The *French* followed him, and forced him to fight, not willing to forbear the hopes he had of the Victory, although Legates came from the Pope, and submiſſively desired Peace. But the Prince of *Wales* scorning the base conditions sent him by the *French* (namely, That he should yeeld himself and his Army to the mercy of the *French*) made himself ready to fight, and making choice of some places that were Vineyards, and over-grown with briars, that he might avoid

void the violence of the Horſe, there he planted his Bow-men, who eaſily troubled the Horſemen that came improvidently to offend them, and ſo began the Battell, and following their ſucceſs, they diſperſed and routed all the *French* Army preſently; King *John* himſelf, with his younger Sonne *Philip*, and an innumerable Nobility of *France* were taken priſoners; ſeven thouſand were ſlain, amongſt whom were many chief Noble men. The reſt with three Sons of the King eſcaped by flight. The King of *France* though he were captivated, was uſed with all reſpect by Prince *Edward*, and when he had wintred with him at *Bourdeaux*, at the beginning of the ſpring he is brought into *England*, and is entertained richly by King *Edward*; vvho being content with one Captive King, he releaſed *David* King of *Scotland*, at the requeſt of Queen *Joan*, ſiſter to *Edward*, when he had lived in *England* eleven years, firſt paying his Ranſom that he had promiſed. But by the interceſſion of ſome Cardinals, there was a Treaty of Peace between both Kings. And *John* being now weary of his ſtay in *England*, eaſily yeelded to thoſe conditions which *Edward* propounded. But his eldeſt Sonne the Dolphine Prince, and the Counſel of *France*, vvere not content with them, ſaying they were heavy and unjuſt. Whereupon *Edward* impatient of delayes, attempts to make good by Arms, that he could not obtain in Peace. He leaving the charge of the Kingdom to his younger Sonne *Thomas*, with 1100 Ships, and the Flower of the Nobility of *England*, ſails to *Calais*, vvhere he divided his Army into three

parts:

parts: The first Body he trusted with the Prince of *Wales*, the second to *Lancaster*, the third he kept for himself. Then over-running *Picardy*, he wan many Towns, till he sat down with his Army before the Walls of *Paris*, waiting in vain for the coming of the Dolphin, wherefore he retreated toward *Lions*. But in the way he was overtaken with so great a tempest, in the year 1360, that being mightily frighted, he made a vow to make peace with the *French*, and not long after it was confirmed at *Lyons*: In which conditions the *French* King was also included with his Sonne, and is released from his Captivity, and great part of *France*, with a vast summe of Money is granted to *Edward*, but the *French* King the next year, (the cause why is not certain) came for *England*, and after he had languished long, he died there.

Edward about this time instituted the Order of Knights of the Garter, with great solemnity.

The fame of the Prince of *Wales* was now spread through the world, wherefore if any were oppressed with injury, or wronged by their enemies, they fled to him for to be their Protector, and to revenge their wrongs. Amongst the rest, *Peter* King of *Castile* was restored again to his Kingdom, who returned him very small thanks for his labour, for *Peter* refused to pay the Souldiers their wages they deserved. The Prince got nothing by it, but griefe of minde and body, (if you set aside the fame and glory he acquired of his great vertue.) The Souldiers in the *interim*, being enraged

ged for lack of their pay, that they might not want neceſſary proviſion, over-run the Territories round about, and commit rapine in all places where they came; whereupon the inhabitants complain to the King of *France*, therefore the *French* King ſets the Prince a day to give an account of this inſolence: He denied to come, unleſſe he came armed with 60000 Souldiers; ſo this controverſie brake forth into open Warre, and they on both ſides take by force many Towns, and abundance of men are ſlain, the *Engliſh* for the moſt part having the beſt of it, conquering the Towns of *Burdeanx* and *Belloparch*, where they took the Mother of the Duke of *Borbon*, and the Queen of *France*.

About this time *Philippa* Queen of *England* died, yet her death put no ſtop to the *Engliſh* proceedings in *France*.

For the Earle of *Pembroke* falling upon the people of *Anion*, wan many Towns, and when he endeavoured to take and ſpoil the *French* Navy, by the induſtry of the Earl of *Sant-Paul*, he was fruſtrated, and ſo he returned for *Calis*, plundering all in the way. In the mean time the men of *Angiers* and *Bourges* waſted the borders of the Prince of *Wales*, which when he endeavoured to oppoſe, receiving news of *Lemoges* taken, making haſte thither, he wan it again, killing all every where, but obſerving the valour of three Centurions, who by their Gallantry checked his conquering ſword, for their ſakes he ſpared the City, and the Lives of all the inhabitants that were left. *David* King of *Scots* died in the mean time, leaving

no

no heir, beſides his Couſin *Robert Stuart*, who ſucceeded him, and was Crowned at *Scone*, *Robert Canolus* was now ſent into *France* with a great Army, behaved himſelf more boldly than fortunately, for he was circumvented by *Bertrand Geſquinus*, and loſt the greateſt part of his men.

Edward Prince of *Wales*, the moſt famous for his Valour and Chivalry, died at *Burdeaux* about this time, and *Gualter Mani* a valiant Captain, died at *London*. Alſo the Earl of *Pembroke*, who had married his Daughter, being now Governour of *Guyan*, when he was going to his charge of Government, was taken by the *Spaniards* and carried into *Spain*. All thoſe poſſeſſions which the Prince of *Wales* had won, followed, and were recovered again by *Charles* the fifth, King of *France*, ſo that the chance of War now began manifeſtly to alter. *Edward* indeed went thither with mighty Forces, but by a contrary Tempeſt he loſt his labour, and *Lancaſter* was careful of his buſineſs, but did nothing prevail.

Edward when he had loſt, (together with his hopes he conceived of his Sonne *Edward*,) all the fruits almoſt of his travel in *France*, fell into ſo great grief of minde and body, that he died about ten moneths after the Prince of *Wales*, when he had raigned fifty years. He was the moſt valiant of all the Kings, a comely perſon, excellent for the gifts of his body and minde, living as one may ſay after his death, having had a Wife and a Sonne that were incomparable, and was buried at *Weſtminſter*.

RICHARD *the Second, King of* England *and* France.

Richardus II. D. G. Rex
Ang: Fran: et Dom: Hib: &c.

Anno 1378.

RICHARD firnamed of *Burdeaux*, the Sonne of *Edward* the Black Prince of *Wales*, appointed to succeed by *Edward* his Grandfather, came to the Crown after his death, not yet being past eleven years of age. Wherefore he had Governours assigned to him, *John* Duke

of

of *Lancaster*, and *Edmund* Earl of *Cambridge*, his Uncles by his Fathers ſide. The *Scotch* and *French* taking occaſion to win from him by reaſon of his Nonage, provide Armies for invaſion. The *French* conquer the City *Rye*, and being encouraged by their ſucceſs they fall upon the Iſle of *Wight*, and ſpoil all with fire and ſword, wreſting from the Inhabitants great ſummes of Money, and ſo ſpoiling all the Frontiers of *England*, they are enriched with a vaſt prey. The *Scotch* take the Caſtle of *Barwick*, but by the Valour of the people of *Northumberland* and *Nottingham* the Fort is recovered, and all the *Scots* killed. Alſo *Hugh Calverly*, Governour of *Callis* burn'd 26 Ships of *France* in the Harbour of *Bononia*, caſting fire amongſt them. So *John Philpot* Citizen of *London*, preparing a Fleet at his own charge, took all the Ships of *Mercerus*, a notable Rover, who plaid the Pirate on the borders of *England*, and robd all the *Engliſh* Merchants Ships. When he returned, inſtead of a reward, he is accuſed of high Treaſon, becauſe he had fitted his Navy without the Kings knowledge, he defended his cauſe ſo well, that he not only excuſed what he did, but is famous for it unto this day. The King ſaid, *That publick actions may be privately traduced, yet they may not be publickly examined, ſince Authority would in ſuch a caſe commit a fault, and in place of an errour raiſe a tumult, and ſince the loſſe is generall and common, every one affords weapons for revenge, and though it were againſt reaſon to exceed the Commiſſion, yet it cannot be held a criminall matter, to engage for it with hazard of ones life.*

With

With good and bad fortune they laboured much on both sides. The *Scotch* waste with fire *Rupisburg*, but the Earl of *Northumberland* entring *Scotland*, spoil'd the Territories of *Merchia* with sword and flame likewise. The Northern *English* attempting to invade *Scotland* also are unhappily slain. And afterwards the Duke of *Lancaster*, with *Buckingham*, *Warwick*, *Stafford*, and others, the chief of the Nobility, arrive in *Britain* with a great Fleet, thinking to lay siege to S^t. *Malos*, but finding the Garrison too strong, they return home again. The *Scotch* in the mean while setting scaling ladders to the Castle of *Barwick*, overcame it in the night, and killed *Robert Baynton* Governour of it. But the Earl of *Northumberland* coming suddenly with an Army, regain'd the Castle after he had beleaguerd it two dayes. *William Montacute* the Kings Embassadour at *Callis*, was successfull in his business both by Sea and Land. But *John Clark* was as unfortunate, though he behaved himself valiantly, being conquered and taken by the enemy, both he and his Ships. And so here and elsewhere they strove with doubtfull fortune.

In the mean while *Thomas Cartonius* is accused for Treason by *John Ansler*, that he had for money given up to the *French* the Castle of S^t. *Saviour*. *Cartonius* denying the fact, is challenged by *Ansler* to fight a Duel with him, wherein *Carton*, though he were farre stronger in Limbs and force than *Ansler*, is killed by him. At the beginning of the fourth year of King *Richard's* Raign, the Earl of *Buckingham* was sent

with others, and a ſmall Army into *France*, to aſſiſt the Duke of *Britain*, but the *French* King dying about that time, Peace was confirmed between the new King and the Duke. But the *Spaniſh* and the *French* Galleys did wonderfully ſpoil the Sea-Towns of *England* at that time, and many Towns were either plunder'd or conſumed by fire, ſo laden with the prey they returned home.

The *Kentiſh* men by reaſon of the deadly burden of Tributes, grew mad, and are enraged with an implacable hatred againſt the Nobility, taking all occaſions they could finde, for the baſeſt dregs of men commonly being uncapable of honour themſelves, which they cannot ſuſtain, are envious againſt thoſe that are. They report that *Wat Tyler* was the Author of it, who killed the Collector of Tribute that behaved himſelf arrogantly with his own ſtaff, that he took from him. To whom other ſeditious fellows, and whole Provinces joyned themſelves. This tumultuary Faction increaſed mightily, came to *London* with his Army, and kills firſt of all *Richard Lyon*, a *London* Doctor with an Ax. And putting his Head on the top of his Spear, carries it for a Trophie of his valour. Then all of them the next day runne to *Lancaſter*-Hall, and ſet it on fire, they take away the rich Hangings, and throw them into the Thames, carefully looking to it that no man ſhould keep any thing for himſelf, and when one covetous fellow had hid a ſilver Cup in his boſome, they take the man and threw him into the fire alive, with the Cup. Part of them got into the Wine-cellar, who being half oppreſſed with the Houſe falling down,

down, lived ſeven dayes after the great downfall, imploring no ſuccour to help them. After this manner, plundering up and down, they runne madding to every place; At laſt they haſten to the Kings Court, and to the Tower of *London*, and they quickly overcome the Tower, the King not daring to make oppoſition againſt them, where the Queen-Mother, ſuffering an affront by a certain inſolent fellow that offered her a bone, fell down half dead. *Simon* Biſhop of *Canterbury*, being haled out of the Tower, had his Head cut off at Tower-hill by them. *Robert Hallius* endured the ſame death, and ſo did many others; They neither regarded Churches nor publick places, they deſtroy all in their fury like mad men. The King thinking what remedy he ſhould uſe to ſuppreſſe theſe tumults, granting a Pardon for what they had done, endeavours to pacifie the Rabble. The Inhabitants of the County of *Eſſex* are obedient, and return home. But the *Kentiſh* men perſiſt in their ſtubbornneſſe, *Tyler* being their Leader: To whom, in the Kings Name *John Newton* was ſent, that he might by intreaty reduce theſe inſolent people to their Duty, or elſe ſhould enquire what they would have; He coming riding on Horſback, was commanded by *Tyler* to alight, and to deliver his Meſſage on foot (ſo much Authority did he arrogate to himſelf in this fury) the Knight refuſed to come from his Horſe, whereupon *Tyler* comes at him with his Sword: The King loath to have the Knight endanger'd, intreats him to alight, the Knight refuſing it, and *Tyler* urging him, at laſt came *William Walworth* the

Major of the City, and with the ſtaff he had in his hand, he gave *Tyler* a grievous wound on the Head, and according to his office bid him ſubmit to the King; whilſt he ſtood reeling with this blow, he was killed by the Kings followers with innumerable wounds. The Captain being ſlain, the maimed faction ſeemed to prepare for to be revenged; But the King, though he were yet under fifteen years of age, paſſed on to them with a ready minde, promiſing that he would be their Commander, and bad them follow him, and all ſhould be as they deſired. In the mean while *Walworth* had gathered together about a 1000 Citizens, the Captain whereof was *Robert Conolus*, and coming upon them as they were in a Tumult, he put them in ſuch a fright, that they caſt away their Arms, and were glad to ſubmit. The Citizens had fallen upon the Rebels, but the King would not ſuffer them, leaſt they ſhould kill the Innocent with the offendours: That the tumult might be wholly ended, he gave each man leave to return home to his habitation. But elſewhere the ſame quiet was not procured; For in *Suffolk* they ran madding up and down unmeaſurably, and pulled down ſome Judges houſes; and ſo at *Cambridge*, and in other places, killing, cutting off the Heads, and otherwayes miſerably maſſacring the Nobility; Their Captain was *John Litteſter* a Diar, who was grown ſo lofty that he behaved himſelf like a King. But he with all his followers was ſuppreſſed by *Henry Spencer*, Biſhop of *Norwich*, an induſtrious and valiant man, who took him priſoner, and brought him to Execution. At *London* alſo, and elſe-

where

where they proceeded againſt the guilty, where *John Straw*, and others are put to death, and ſo all this Tumult was ended. *Lancaſter* in the mean while was ſent againſt the *Scotch*, that he might perpetually obſerve them, if they ſhould attempt any thing upon the occaſion of theſe diſorders. But he ſo wiſely managed the matter, that before they had any rumour of his March thitherward, there was a Ceſſation granted for two or three years. In the interim, *Anna* the Siſter of *Wenceſlaus* the Emperour came to *London* to be married to the King, where the Marriage was ſolemnized with a wonderfull pomp.

Henry Spencer about that time had obtained an Army from the King, which he led againſt the *French*, and chiefly for Pope *Urban* againſt *Clement* the Anti-pope; And firſt coming into *Flanders*, he beſieged *Iper*, but by a greater force marching out of *France*, he was conſtrained to raiſe the Siege, and when they came beſide *Graveling*, he writ to the King, that there was now a fit occaſion to defeat the Enemy, but *Lancaſter* who had the command, making delayes, it fell to nothing; ſo *Spencer* having done no buſineſs returns home again, and ſhortly after Truce was made between the *French* and the *Engliſh*.

In the mean while the *Scotch* entring the Borders of *England*, conſumed many Towns and Caſtles with fire and ſword: But *Lancaſter* with *Buckingham* going againſt them, when they could not force the *Scots* to fight, for revenge of the wrong they had done, ſet fire to ſome of their Cities and Villages, and ſo retreat for *England*.

But *Richard* to ſuppreſs their Inſolence, to whom alſo the *French* had ſent aid, he with his Army marched into *Scotland*, and finding *Edenburgh* without a Garriſon, he ſet that on fire; The *Scots* to divert the *Engliſh* Forces, fall into *Cumberland*, and lay ſiege to *Carlile*, but hearing of *Richards* approach, they giving warning to their fellows return for *Scotland*.

Lancaſter at that time with a choice number of Souldiers makes a voyage into *Spain*, King *Richard* beſtowing on him the Title of the King of *Spain*, where he did conquer ſome Towns, and married his Daughter to the King of *Portugall*, but the *Engliſh* being impatient of that Countrey, and the heat of the Ayre, fell into all kindes of diſeaſes, and ſo made a Truce, which a Peace followed ſhortly after.

On the Coaſts of *France*, the Earls of *Arundel* and *Nottingham* being the Leaders, an hundred *French* Veſſels laden with wine were overcome, and *Breſt* freed from a Siege. But a grievous Controverſie grew at this time in *England* between the King and the Nobility, the Duke of *Gloceſter*, the Earl of *Arundel* and others; the Duke of *Ireland*, the Earls of *Suffolk*, and many other malicious men ſetting them on. They fell to their Arms, but by the milder counſell of others they grew friends again. The Duke of *Ireland* leaving the Court of his own accord, fell amongſt the Forces of the Earl of *Darby*, and not daring to fight, ſwimming the River with his Horſe, he landed at *Beauvois*, where like a baniſhed man he lived ſome years

at

at *Lovaine*. And the reſt who were Authors of the Warre againſt the King at a famous ſitting in Parliament, were commanded to forſake the Court and Kingdom, and ſome were put to extream tortures.

In the 15th year of *Richards* Government, the *Londoners* fell to Mutiny, for a very light cauſe, and the King being wonderfully offended at them for a ſmall ſumme of Money they had refuſed him, he puniſhed them with the loſſe of their chiefe priviledges, and with the payment of a great ſumme of money. This is the effect of offending Kings.

After this in a ſolemn meeting of the Kings, Peace was ratified between *England* and *France*, *Iſabella* the Daughter of the *French* King, a Maid of eight years old, being betrothed to King *Richard*. For *Anna* his former Wife was deceaſed. The Duke of *Gloceſter* by an importune word blaming the Kings negligence, fell into his diſpleaſure, and fearing ſome iſſue of it, with his Brothers, forſooke the Court, and entring into a Conſpiracy with ſome friends, he attempted to change the ſtate of the Kingdom. But the King under-feeling it, with his Brother the Earl of *Huntington*, took a progreſs to the Caſtle of the Duke of *Gloceſter* his Fathers Brother, when he came there at night he found the Duke riſing out of his Bed, and preſently going to meet him, he was taken by the Earl *Marſhall*, and carried Priſoner to *Calis*, and there was hanged miſerably. Alſo the Earl of *Arundel* the chief Conſpiratour, and ſome principal Noblemen, are caſt into Priſon. And he afterwards in a Parliament being queſtioned for

his life, had his head cut off, the reſt being condemned either to be baniſhed, or to perpetual Impriſonment; And thus *Richard* by the bloud of the Nobility thought to make good his Kingdom.

The Dukes of *Norfolk* and *Hereford* without any other witneſs, appeaching one the other of Treaſon, are admitted to fight a Duell, but when they were both ready to fight, they were commanded to forbear, and ſo to ſpare blood, they were both ſent away to divers places into Baniſhment. *Norfolk* went firſt for *Germany*, then to *Venice*, where he died of meer ſorrow and grief. But *Hereford* who had ſail'd into *France*, and there being inſtigated by the Counſel of the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, who was baniſhed for the ſame Conſpiracy, returned privately home, under a pretence of his patrimony to be redeemed (which the King had brought into the Exchequer after his Fathers death, againſt all Right and Equity) but indeed, that joyning with the Nobility he might order the Kings inſolence. He was ſcarce landed, but the Nobility came from all parts to him, and he waxed very ſtrong. And having now a ſufficient Army, he took ſome Cities, and beheaded the Kings chiefeſt Counſellours. *Richard* in the *interim* was in *Ireland*, and did his beſt to ſubdue the *Iriſh*; When a Meſſenger came to him of the Commotions in *England*, he was troubled at it, yet made no haſte, according as the danger required. At length the Earl of *Saliſbury* was ſent into *England* before him, that he might levy what Forces he could, the King promiſing in ſix dayes to be with him. As ſoon

as

as the Earl ſet foot in *England*, he raiſed with eaſe a mighty Army of *Welſh*, but the King not appearing, a rumour was given that he was dead, ſo part of his Forces went one way, ſome another, but a few ſtood to their Colours; the King at laſt, ſo ſoon as contrary windes would let him, came to them. But when he found ſo much of the Countrey to be fallen to *Hereford*, and the Duke of *Lancaſter* alſo by the death of his Father; he quite fainted in his minde, and bad all thoſe men that came to help him to go whither they pleaſed, yet they continuing their fidelity, he with the Earl of *Exeter*, and ſome others, fled to the Caſtle of *Conve*, where he found the Earl of *Salisbury*. Here the Duke of *Worceſter*, who was Governour of the Kings Houſe, breaking his white Staff, a ſigne of his Office, and ſo renouncing his fidelity, fell off from the King to the Lords Conſpiratours. Then the Earl of *Northumberland* is ſent to the King, who from that Caſtle conveyed him to another place, ſaying alſo that he came to treat with the King for Conditions of peace: which the King did not refuſe, but in the way the Earl of *Rutland* coming upon him, he is forced to go to *Flint* Caſtle, whither ſhortly after *Henry* the Duke of *Lancaſter* came, who was guilty, and friendly received by the King, and then he related the cauſe of his coming, which was, that he might receive his Rights and goods. The King granted, and ratified all, ſo they went to drink together, and afterwards mounting on Horſback, they ride towards *London* in a continued voyage, in ſo great haſt that the King had no leiſure

given

given him to change his cloaths. Then was the King put into the Tower, the Caſtle for the Nobility, and was diligently watched there. And a Parliament was called by the command of *Lancaſter*, though it were falſly given out in the Kings Name, wherein *Richard* was accuſed of divers crimes, Namely, *That he had waſted the goods of the Kingdom. That he had borrowed a vaſt ſumme of Money, and not yet repay'd it. That he had made all the Lawes Arbitrary, as he pleaſed. That he had changed the Members of Parliament when he would. That he had Tyrannically taken Power to himſelf over the Subjects Eſtates. That he had corrupted the Judges. That he had cauſed his Uncle Earl of* Gloceſter *to be barbarouſly murdered at* Callis. *That he had impriſoned the Members of Parliament. That beyond Right and Equity he had put the Earl of* Arundel *to extream Torture. That he had depopulated his own Kingdome. That he had pawned the Ornaments of the Kingdome and Kings out of the Kingdome*, and ſo forward. For which faults they thought fit to deprive him of all his Honours and Title of King; But he that he might ſeem to deſire what he would have avoided, willingly reſigned all his Right to the Kingdom, and freely gave it to *Henry* of *Lancaſter* whom he nominated to ſucceed him, which was ratified and confirmed by the Great Seal. Then *Richard* being brought to *Pomfret*-Caſtle, was diſcharged of his Crown.

Henry having thus got the Kingdome, and not enduring any Competitour, one day lamenting, was heard to cry out, *Is there any*

man

man will free me from that hatefull man? And preſently one *Peter Exton* a Knight, that he might winne the Kings favour with ſuch a wickedneſſe, went with eight more unto *Richard*, whom he ſet upon to kill him, being at Dinner, but *Richard* riſing haſtily, wreſting the Ax out of the hands of one of his Executioners, killed four of them, and at laſt by this *Peter Exton* he was knocked down dead himſelf, by an unhappy blow on the Head, which the Parricides lamented when it was too late.

Thus the unhappieſt and moſt well-favoured of the Kings of *England*, ended his life and Kingdom, being firſt buried at *Langley* in *Hartfordſhire*, and afterward removed to *Weſtminſter*.

HENRY *the Fourth, King of* England *and* France.

Henricus IIII D.G. Rex.
Ang: Fran: et Dom: Hib: etc.

Anno 1399.

HENRY of *Lancaſter*, who was nominated to ſucceed, was crowned King, but that he might not be thought to uſurp that Kingdom which he had by Election, he endeavoured to be eſtabliſhed in his own Right, vaunting that he was the next Heir, being directly deſcended

ſcended from *Henry* the third, but that was falſe and counterfeit, for *Roger Mortimer* Earl of *Marſh*, deriving his Pedigree from the eldeſt Sonne of *Henry* the third, had a better Titſe. To this he added, his Right of Force, whereby he made good the Succeſſion he could not have done by inheritance; Be it what it will be, he maintain'd it by his Sword. He gave good example when his Right held but weakly, for he made it up by good turns, granting a General Pardon of all the wrongs had been done unto him, but thoſe that were guilty of the death of the Duke of *Gloceſter*, he brought to a ſhamefull end, abhorring ſo great wickedneſſe.

But after that the Fame of *Richard* being depoſed, was divulged in *France*, King *Charls* was purpoſed to revenge his Sonne in Laws wrongs, and to re-eſtabliſh him in the Throne. But when it was certainly underſtood that he was dead, all that buſineſſe came to nothing.

Alſo thoſe of *Aquitan* and other places riſing about the rumour of the death of their Duke, were pacified by Meſſengers ſent to them in time. When he had got the Kingdom by troubles, it could not be but that he muſt hold it with troubles alſo. For *John* Earl of *Exceter*, with *John Montacute*, *Thomas* Earl of *Kent* his Nephew, *Hugh Spencer* and others, conſpired to invite *Henry* to *Oxford*, under pretence of Running a Tilt, thinking to kill him treacherouſly at this exerciſe. But the matter was diſcovered and became void. Then what by fraud they could not do, they attempt

to

to do by open Warre, carrying about with them a certain counterfeit *Richard* (for he was not yet ſlain) and they labour to reſtore him, as one that was miſerably wronged, but their Forces running from them, either by fear of diſtruſt, the Authours of it were taken, and cruelly put to death. The *Welſh* alſo about that time, as their cuſtome was, make new Commotions, but the King came opportunely with his Army, and eaſily diſperſed them, puniſhing the chief of them. Whilſt theſe things were in motion *George Dumbar* fled into *England* to the Earl of *Northumberland*, craving aſſiſtance againſt *David* the Sonne of the King of *Scotland*; for he had Divorced the Daughter of this *George*, that was betrothed to him, and had married another Wife, not reſtoring the Dowry of the former. Wherefore both of them making a Sally into *Scotland*, fought firſt on equal terms with the Adverſaries, but at laſt they routed them, and came back loaded with great ſpoil.

In the mean while *Thomas* Earl of *Worceſter*, knowing that the King was taken up with the Commotions in *Wales*, joyning to himſelf *Henry* Earl of *Stafford*, his Couſin by his Brothers ſide, with an Army, and the *Scotch* to boot, who naturally hated the *Engliſh*, beyond meaſure, makes Warre againſt the King; But the King, leaſt by delayes the miſchief might encreaſe, leaving *Wales* came in time to oppoſe them. When both Armies were now ready, they fell to it fiercely, and fought long on equal terms, untill ſuch time

as

as the perfidious *Welſh* came to aſſiſt *Thomas*, and began the Battel afreſh; Yet *Henry*, Father and Sonne, gave wonderfull teſtimony of their invincible Courages, running *Thomas* of *Worceſter* through with a Lance, and killing him. Whereupon they vanquiſhed the Enemy that was now in ſuch fair hopes, and glorying of the Victory. *Henry Piercy* the King took Priſoner, and cauſeth his head to be cut off, *Anno* 1402.

Alſo the Earl of *Northumberland*, who was one of the partakers, to ſave his Life, fled to *George* of *Dumbar* Earl of *Marſh*, who was now reſtored to his Eſtate in *Scotland*. After this Conqueſt Prince *Henry* makes an inroade againſt the perfidious *Welſh*, and eaſily put an end to a mutinous Warre, ſubduing the Rebels, baniſhing *Owen* the Ring-leader, a very valiant man, but ſeditious, who was ſo brought to great want, and ended his life miſerably.

In the mean while the *French* came to help the Rebel *Welſh* with thirty Ships, their Leader was *James Borbon* Earl of *Marſh*, they ſet Sail, but by a Tempeſt were brought upon ſome other Coaſt of *England*, and they got into *Cornwall*, upon which occaſion they poſſeſſed themſelves of *Plymmouth* Haven, and comming on Land, they ruine all places they meet with fire and Sword; But ſtormes ſuddenly ariſing, twelve of their Ships were drowned, ſo they began to think how to return back, and haſtily giving warning to the reſt, laden with their prey they came again to *France*. But *Thomas* the Sonne of King *Henry*, with his

Navy

Navy brought together, depopulated the Frontiers of *France*, and taking many Merchantmen, ſufficiently requited this Injury. But the Kings of *France* and *England*, being full of troubles at home, and ſo thinking leſſe of revenge, made a Truce for ſome moneths. The King untill that time being a Batchelour, took to Wife *Joan* that was formerly married to Duke *Montfort*, and eſpouſed her Daughter *Blanch* to the Sonne of the Duke of *Bavaria*.

At that time *William Plunton*, a valiant warlike Knight, conſpired againſt the King, with the Friends of *Mowbray*, who (as we ſaid) lived baniſhed at *Venice*. To theſe the men of *Northumberland*, and laſtly the *Scotch* united themſelves. The King being certain of this matter, comes preſently with an Army, and eaſily defeated them. *Plunton* and ſome of his Followers, with *Richard Scroop* Archbiſhop of *York*, who was ſaid to have had a finger in this Rebellion, was taken priſoner. *Plunton* by the generall vote loſt his Head for his inſolence, and afterwards the reſt were put to death, being convicted of this wickedneſs.

The King to extinguiſh Rebellion quite, ſent his Sonne *Henry* Prince of *Wales* againſt the *Scots*, who were coming on to aſſiſt *Plunton*, but they, when they had heard that the Conſpiracy was detected, and the Authours of it executed, were not come from their places. But *Henry* that he might not loſe his labour, enters *Scotland*, and waſts it miſerably with fire and Sword, and ſtruck a wonderfull terrour upon the *Scots*, ſo loading himſelf with the

ſpoile

ſpoile and booty, he returns back to his Father to *London*, who was vexed to the purpoſe with new Commotions dayly riſing one out of another, upon every occaſion. And now again ſome body had raiſ'd a Rumour amongſt the People, that *Richard* was yet alive, whereupon the common people that alwayes gape after novelties, being moved, had made dangerous troubles, if their faction had not been wiſely and timely ſuppreſſed. Alſo the Earl of *Northumberland* making a Covenant with *George* Earl of *Marſh*, and raiſing ſome thouſands of *Scotch* and *Engliſh*, he entered the Borders of *England*, and preys in an hoſtile manner on the Territories of *Yorkſhire*; The King went againſt them, and overthrew all their Forces, routing them in a tumultuary battell. Some of the principall who fell into the Kings power were brought to *York* and executed there.

In the mean while *Edmund* Earl of *Kent*, to ſuppreſs the *French* Pyrats was ſent to Sea with a gallant Navy, but not lighting upon the Pirates, being hot with deſire to fight, he ſought for them in the very Haven, at the Temple of *Brioc*; and when he could not fight at Sea, he entred the City by Land, but the Earl himſelf was killed by an unhappy blow with a ſtone; yet his Souldiers took the Town, rifled it and burnt it, and killing moſt of the Inhabitants they returned again for *England*. Alſo the *Engliſh* at the ſame time, the Earl of *Arundel* being in chief, did do their buſineſſe proſperouſly for the Duke of *Burgundy*, and being highly rewarded, they went backe for their Country, the Warre being as then not ended

between the *Burgundian* and the Duke of *Orleans*. But he, knowing that the hearts of the *Engliſh* were therefore ſet againſt him, requeſting their aſſiſtance, obtained it from King *Henry*, but when there was a ſcattered report that they were both agreed, the auxiliary *Engliſh* ſtaying by the *Loyre*, expected their wages, which when they could not obtaine, they being incenſed, plundered a Town that was hard by, called *Bellilocum*, and the Monaſtery; and after that being called away by the Duke of *Clarence*, they march toward *Gaſconye* for the Duke of *Orleans*, and plunder all as they go along, and when the Duke of *Orleans* had paid them their wages, they were pacified, and returned for *England*.

But *Henry* now for a good while having ended his Civil Warre, and intending an expedition for *Paleſtina*, preparing a Fleet for that purpoſe, died very ſuddenly at *Weſtminſter*, when he had reigned about 14 years. About the time of his death, *James Stuart*, the eldeſt Sonne of *Robert* (for *David* was dead) whileſt he was taking a voyage into *France*, was taken by the *Engliſh*, and was brought to *London*, being exceedingly entertained by the King, but his Father ſuppoſing his Sonne was now loſt, died for meer grief and ſorrow ſhortly after; whom his Brother ſucceeded in the Throne.

HENRY *the Fifth, King of* England *and* France.

Henricus V. D. G. Rex
Ang: Fran: et Dom: Hib:

Anno 1413.

THis King was inaugurated with a wonderfull applauſe and deſire of the Lords and Commons; and he not willing to diſappoint his Subjects of the hope they conceived of him, gave preſently a ſign of his excellent Government, ſending away from him thoſe Miniſters

of laſcivious youth, amongſt whom he had been formerly bred; and leaſt by ſluggiſhneſſe his valiant heart ſhould languiſh, he ſets his whole care how to recover his right in *France*, having narrowly looked into it. Firſt, he ſent Heraulds, and demanded his Kingdome from King *Charles*, promiſing to Marry his Daughter, and threatning alſo, that if *Charles* would not do it, he would come with an Army and take his Patrimony by force. *Charles* laughed at his Embaſſadours, whereby he ſo enraged the minde of *Henry*, that he preſently muſtering a mighty Army, with about 120 Ships, he ſails into *France*; Firſt, he beſieged *Harflet*, and in a few dayes compelled it to yeild: Then paſſing to *Semma*, at the Temple of *Maxentius*, the enemy met him, wherefore he pitched his Tents: But when he ſaw the enemy not very greedy to fight, he skirmiſhed lightly, and ſo paſſed on to *Callis*. The *French* man in the meane time, when it came into his minde, ſent Heraulds to *Henry* to challenge him to fight, who was not unwilling to accept it, he diſmiſſed them with rewards, and paſſing over a River, preſently news came that the enemy was at hand, wherefore he haſtily makes himſelfe ready for the Battell, though he were farre inferiour, in forces; they preſently fall on, but *Henry* joyning induſtry to his vertue, giving ſuch a violent charge, that after a terrible fight on both ſides, he put the *French* at laſt to their heels. He himſelf being in the midſt of the enemies Forces diſmounted the Duke of *Alenſon*, who was preſently ſlain by the *Engliſh* Souldiers; they had ſo many priſoners that they

they farre exceeded the Conquerours, wherefore he commanded to kill them all, leaſt they ſhould riſe againſt them that had ſubdued them. There was a wonderfull multitude of Dukes, Earls and Lords that were deſtroyed, and not above 600 of the *Engliſh* was wanting, amongſt which, one was the Duke of *York*. This Battell was fought at *Dagincourt*, which gave a good *omen* to great Victories afterwards. *Henry* by this Victory caſt ſuch a terrour on the *French*, that *Lewis* the *Dolphin*, taking grief of minde died ſhortly after. Such was the conſtancy of *Henryes* heart, that he forbad his Souldiers on paine of death to ſing any ſcurrilous ſongs in derogation of the *French*, but rather to ſing Pſalmes and Hymnes to the glory of God.

In that time *Sigiſmund* the Emperour came to *England*, to treat of Peace between the *French* and the *Engliſh*, nor was *Henry* ſlow in the buſineſſe; but when the *French* in the *interim* beſieged *Harflet*, he was ſo angry, that no man afterwards durſt mention Peace, and preſently ſending the Duke of *Bedford* to raiſe the ſiege, with the Earl of *Marſh*, *Oxford*, and other Earls, and 200 Ships, he fought a bloody Battell at Sea at *Harflet* Haven, with *Borbon* the *French* Admiral, wherein the *Engliſh* wan the day, ſinking 500 Ships of the *French*, and ſo freed the Town. But *Cæſar* finding the perfidiouſneſs of the *French*, did not only forbear ever after to make mention of any Peace, but made a firme League with the *Engliſh* againſt all oppoſers, and ſo returned back into *Germany*. The *French* in the mean time, not to be

idle, hired ſome great Ships of *Genoa*, and beſieging the Haven of *Harflet*, endeavoured to hinder all relief from the Town. But the Earl of *Huntington* coming ſuddenly upon them, after a fierce fight diſperſed them, and vanquiſhed the reſt. He took the Duke of *Borbon* a Baſtard, and ſo returned Conquerour for *England*. Then the King with his chief Nobility ſailed into *Normandy*, and Conquered the Fort *Tucha*, whilſt the Earl of *Salisbury* wan *Albervill*, which place the King gave freely to him and his heirs. After that he wan *Caen*, which City when the Townſmen defended with great obſtinacy, he made Mines ſecretly, through which the moſt forward of the ſouldiery entred the City, the Duke of *Clarence* leading them on, and ſetting on the Guard, put them all to flight, and ſo the whole Army found entrance, ſome of the principal for their perverſneſs were put to death, and the plunder of the City was given to the Souldiers. The Governour had not yet yeelded the Fort, but when the King ſware he would ſpare none if they continued reſolute, at laſt he gave it up. The *French* in the mean while being in Civil broils, all things went with the *Engliſh* as they pleaſed. He ſent the Duke of *Clarence* to beſiege the Town of *Bayon*, which he quickly wan, whilſt he ſtaid at *Caen*, he reſtored to the people of *Lyons* a mighty maſs of Treaſure, that was found in the Caſtle, which the frighted people had brought thither, upon condition that they ſhould be conſtant in their obedience for the future: This was a patern of his wonderfull piety. Then he removed to *Corfeu*, and in three dayes won

won the Town. Then he ſubdued *Argentaniam*, after that *Alencon*, then *Faleſia*, and ſo returned Victor to *Caen*. He had almoſt the like ſucceſs at Sea, vanquiſhing many Ships of the enemy; but his own Fleet was toſſed long in a tempeſt whilſt he ſtrove to ſail to *Southhampton*, yet he loſt but two Ships. In the mean while the Earl of *Warwick* and *Talbot* conquer the Caſtle of *Dumfriſe*, and *Clarentius* maſtered *Curton*, and many other Towns. Then the King layes ſiege to *Roan*, and at laſt by famine he forced the obſtinate Citizens to ſubmit, which Town being the chief was an example for the reſt to follow, ſo that ſhortly he wan all *Normandy*, which was loſt by the careleſneſs of his predeceſſors. The Duke of *Burgundy* finding all the *Engliſh* deſired to ſucceed, thought it concerned him to procure peace between both Kings, and at laſt he obtained a meeting between *Henry* and the *French* Queen, (for the King was fallen into his uſuall doting) yet there was nothing enacted. The Queen had brought her moſt beautifull Daughter *Katharine*, that ſhe might enſnare the Kings minde with her allurements, nor was it in vain, for *Henry* when he ſaw her was wonderfully taken with her; and when they departed doing nothing, the King laid a charge on the Duke of *Burgundy*, that unleſs all he asked, together with the Kings Daughter, were granted him, he would by force take from the Duke his Dukedom, and from the King his Kingdom. They were ſo frighted with theſe threats, that they fell to a new Parly. But the Dolphin, by reaſon of this newly conceived hatred, and

burning with former envy, commanded the Duke of *Burgundy* to be killed baſely, not long after, though he begged his life from him on his knees, and ſo the ſlaughter of the Duke of *Orleance*, committed before by *Burgundy* was expiated. Nor is peace yet concluded, until the *French* were forced to it by a further loſs. A meeting was appointed at *Trecas*, and there was *Katherine* betrothed to *Henry*, and the right of ſucceſſion was confirmed to him after the death of *Charles*; whereupon all the Nobility of *France* ſwear to be Loyall to him, and ſo the Salique Law in *France* was broken. The *Dolphin* who had not conſented to theſe Conditions, is made Warre againſt by the Kings of *France* and *England*, and divers Towns that took part with him are conquered, and when as he came not upon his citation to appear at *Paris* before the Marble Table (as they call it) upon the day appointed, he was baniſhed. *Henry* alſo uſing his Authority, commanded Money to be coyned with the Arms of *France* and *England*, which he called the *Soveraign*. Then leaving the Duke of *Clarence* Governour. of *France* and *Normandy*, he returned for *England*. But *Clarence* making an expedition againſt *Anion*, and ſpoyling them, as he came back laden with the prey, he was betrayed in his paſſage by one *Andrew Fogoſus*, and though he fought valiantly, yet was he ſlain by the Duke of *Alenſon*, with the chief Nobility, and 2000 *Engliſh* men. The Earls of *Sommerſet* and of *Suffolk*, and other Lords were taken priſoners. The King to revenge his Brothers death, lands in *France* with a mighty Army,

and

and freed *Chartres* from a ſiege of the Dolphin, for when he heard of the Kings approach, he retreated to *Towrs*, whilſt the *Scotch* King with the Duke of *Gloceſter* conquer *Drocas*. *Henry* purſues the Dolphin from place to place, yet could not overtake him, though he took all Towns in his way, ſo that he joyned in a ſhort time all the Iſland of *France* to the reſt.

In the *interim* the Queen was delivered of a Sonne at *Windſor*, who was Chriſtned *Henry*, of whom King *Henry* ſpake as a Prophet, *Good God*, ſaith he, *I* Henry *of* Monmouth *ſhall have but a ſhort Reign, and ſhall prevail much, but* Henry *of* Windſor *ſhall Reign long, and ſhall loſe all, but the will of GOD be done.*

About that time the Dolphin had beſieged thoſe of *Narbon*, *Henry* marches quickly thither to free them, and making too much haſte, he took a Feaver by over-heating himſelf, wherefore he was forced to ſtay, but the Duke of *Bedford* was diſpatcht, who not only freed them of *Narbon*, but alſo drove the Dolphin towards *Aquitan*, who from thence in mockery was called King of *Aquitan*. But a flux of the belly coming upon *Henries* diſeaſe, which increaſed every day, he was carried to *Boy de Vincenneis*, where within a few dayes he died Chriſtianly, *Anno* 1421. and buried at *Weſtminſter*. Firſt giving to his Brother the Duke of *Bedford* the Title of Regent of *Normandy* and *France*, and his other Brother the Duke of *Gloceſter* he made Governour of *England*. He was not yet over 36 years old, and ſo he died in the top and flower

flower of his age and honour, having reigned nine years and five moneths: The moſt famous Conquerour of all the Kings, and beſt beloved of his Subjects, that he was ſo lamented of them, which is not uſual, that they could not forbear to weep for him. The Doctrine of *Witcliff* was eminent in this Kings reign, for which *John Huſs* and *Hierom* of *Prague*, were at *Cæſars* command afterwards burnt alive.

HENRY *the Sixth, King of* England *and* France,

Henricus VI. D. G. Rex Ang: Fran: et Dom: Hib:

Anno 1422.

HENRY of *Windsor*, the sole Heir of *Henry* the fifth, obtained the Kingdom after his Fathers death, being nine moneths old, who when he came to years, was not like to his Father, either for Vertue or Fortune. He was proclaimed King at *Paris*, by the Authority of the

the Duke of *Bedford*, all the Lords of the Kingdom ſwearing fidelity to him. But King *Charles* the ſixth dying a little after *Henry*, his Sonne *Charles* the ſeventh hoped to regain by Valour and Induſtry, what the *French* had loſt by cowardiſe. Firſt, he wan the *Pont Malanus*, which City by *Montacute* his vertue was again won from him. Then they fought with a doubtfull ſucceſs at *Crepan*, where about 2000 *French* were ſlain, amongſt whom were many Nobles, and the Town was taken. But *Charles* overcame many of the *Engliſh*, driving a great Herd of Cattell toward *Normandy*, and took the prey from them, and freed the Temple of S^t. *Michel* from a ſiege. Then the chance of Warre being altered, he is again put to the worſt at *Vernole*. But the fidelity of the men of *Orleans* was notable, who levelling their Suburbs with the ground, held play with the Earl of *Salisbury*, a moſt valiant Commander, who had beleaguerd them, and when they were almoſt famiſhed, and were ready to yeild themſelves to the Duke of *Burgundy*, *Salisbury* diſdaining the honour ſhould be taken from him, refuſed the Conditions, but he whilſt he was not wary enough in viewing the ſcituation of the City, was ſlain with a Bullet from the Walls.

In the *interim* the Duke of *Gloceſter*, did not a little ſtain his Honour, marrying *Jacoba* the Counteſs of *Holland*, which formerly had been married to *John* Duke of *Brabant*; but ſhe being ſurprized by craft, was brought back to her Husband, but again diſguiſing her ſelf in mans apparell, ſhe eſcaped into *Holland*, and there ſhe

ſhe waged Warre againſt her Husband, and when ſhe was too weak for him, and the Pope would not grant her a Divorce, the Duke of *Gloceſter* rejected her, and ſhe afterwards married to *Francus Borſely*, a Dutch Knight, but he being caſt into priſon by the Duke of *Burgundy*, ſhe afterwards led a miſerable life.

In the mean time the *Engliſh* were often fortunate in Battell againſt the *French*, and recovered divers Towns; but thoſe of *Orleans* having help as it were from God brought to them, did not a little ſtrengthen the *French* proceedings; for *Joan* a Countrey Maid, which had ſpent her youth in keeping Sheepe, deſiring to free the Kingdom of their enemies the *Engliſh*, was brought to the King, who admired the Maids courage, when he ſaw that ſhe was a Maid indeed: Shee putting on mens Armour, brought proviſion into *Orleans* with the Forces ſhe had received from the King, and with many aſſaults at length ſhe raiſed the Siege. Then ſhe wonderfully weakned the *Engliſh* with many, though leſſe Battels; three thouſand *Engliſh* were ſlain in *Belſia*: Nor was *Charles* wanting to his own affairs, but the Maid being Leader he went to *Rhemes*, and recovered the Enſigns of the Kingdom. Then he marched to *Paris*, whileſt *Bedford* was carefull enough, and ſuffered no occaſion to ſlip to manage his buſineſſe as he ought. The Maid at the ſiege of *Compienna*, thinking to relieve the place, received a wound in the leg, and ſo was fain to retreat. Yet this Warlike Maid broke into the City, and ſallying forth again upon the Enemy, ſhe was taken priſoner, and being convicted (as they report)

of

of Art Magick, ſhe was burnt alive. Yet *Compienna*, was freed from the ſiege, and *Melun*, *Corvolium*, and other places were recovered. But the *Engliſh* to gain honour to their ſide, calling King *Henry* to *Paris*, now but twelve years old, they Crown him King of *France*, the Lords of that Kingdom who were preſent, ſwearing fealty unto him. In the mean while *Charles* by the craft of a certain Carter, giving fiſh to the watch, recovers *Lyons*, and ſo he followed the ſucceſſe he had. But the Kingdom all this time was wonderfully ruinated, there was nothing left in the field, and a miſerable lamentation was made every where. At laſt both the Leaders of the Warre having their fill, began to Treat of Agreement, at *Artoys* they meet, the *Engliſh* being baited with the ſweetneſſe of the Kingdom of *France*, could not be pacified, but *Burgundy*, *Matiſcan*, the *Temple* of *Gengon*, *Altiſſidore*, and other Towns being yeelded to him, they were content. Then the *Engliſh* took high indignation, deeply reſenting that the Duke of *Burgundy*, their faithfull companion in the Warre was fallen away from them. Their anger thus incenſed would have been the ruine of the *French*, but being laid down it was their ſafety, for in a ſhort time they ſhook off that heavy yoke: For the *Pariſian*, ſuddenly took courage and drove out the *Engliſh* from *Paris*; and on the other ſide, *Burgundy* with the ſame earneſtneſſe he helped the *Engliſh* before, now aſſiſts the *French*. To this there hapned the death of the Duke of *Bedford* the Governour of *France*, which did a little damnifie the *Engliſh*: Then other places taking

king example by *Paris*, fell off to *Charles*, and the *Normans* ſcarce continued their fidelity, but by the ſlaughter of five thouſand of them, they were either frighted or pacified. The *Engliſh* affairs thus declining in *France*, they did not aſſault Cities and fenced places as formerly, but Caſtles and poor Forts. Alſo *Burgundy* waged offenſive Warre with the Duke of *York*, who ſucceeded *Bedford*, and beſieged *Callis*, but he retreated in time, for the Duke of *Gloceſter* arrived the next day with a great Army, who finding the enemy gone, ruined all with fire and ſword. In the *interim* the *Scotch* laid ſiege to the Caſtle of *Rapesburg*, but being certified of the return of the Duke of *York*, and the coming of the Earl of *Northumberland*, he quickly raiſed his ſiege.

In the mean while *Harflet* was delivered up to the *French* at a price, the Garriſon ſouldiers being corrupted with money. But the Duke of *Sommerſet* and *Talbot*, beſieging the City afreſh by Sea and Land, regained it once more, the Duke of *Orleans* with his Army being come onely to look on. In the mean time *James* King of *Scotland*, after he had been priſoner ten years in *England*, was reſtored to his liberty, and placed with a rich Matron, but being at length ingratefull, he was treacherouſly ſlain in his chamber; the authours of the fact were ſeverally executed. All this while the buſineſs went diverſly in *France* on both ſides; and what by Valour, what by Policy, many Towns were won and recovered again. In *England* a conteſt fell out between the Duke of *Gloceſter* and a Cardinal his Uncle, the Wife of the Duke of *Gloceſter*

ceſter was accuſed by the Cardinal for Witchcraft, as by Magick Arts ſhe went about to take away the Kings life: She was forced publickly to ſatisfie for that wickedneſs ſhe had not attempted, though others that were guilty in their very ſufferings excuſed the Dutcheſs of it. Now by the interceſſion of Chriſtian Princes they began to treat of Peace between the *French* and the *Engliſh*; Peace was not ratified, but a ceſſation was granted for eighteen moneths. In the mean time the Earl of *Suffolk*, by his own Authority contracted a Marriage between King *Henry*, and *Margaret* the Daughter of the Duke of *Angiers*, boaſting much of the Maids Beauty and Dowry; at laſt he perſwaded the King, though he had paſſed his word to the Daughter of the Earl of *Britain*. This Matrimony Contracted gave but ſmall help to the *Engliſh* affairs, when for commutation great part of *Normandy* was yeilded to the *French*: Alſo the Duke of *Britain* revenging the wrong done to his Daughter, drove all the *Engliſh* out of *Aquitan*.

Now the hatred that had long grown between the Duke of *Summerſet* and *York*, began to bud again. He by fraud and injuſtice depoſed this *York*, from his Authority of Viceroy, though he had behaved himſelf gallantly in *France*, and made himſelf Viceroy in his place; *York* being not a little offended at it. For the King did nothing leſſe, than taking care of his Kingdom, all the Authority was between Queen *Margaret* and the Marqueſſe of *Suffolk*. Alſo by the contriving of his adverſaries, the Duke of *Gloceſter*, who was ſo well eſteemed of by all the people,

people, that they pointed at him by the name of the good Duke, was put out of his place, and unknown to the King, a Parliament being called privately, they queſtion him for his life, he was caſt into priſon, where the next day (how, it is not knowne) he was miſerably murdered.

By a ſtratagem the City of *Fulger* was taken by the *Engliſh*, and the Town *Larcha* by the *French*, ſo they brake out into Warre again. The *French* deſpiſing *Sommerſet* for his negligence, who (as we ſaid) had now all the power, wan many Towns, and in *Guyan* divers willingly fell off to the *French*, amongſt which was *Roan*, following the example of the reſt, and more miſchief befell the *Engliſh*. Alſo the Cities of *Harfleet* and *Caer*, though they were valiantly defended, yet by the careleſneſſe of *Sommerſet* the Governour, were delivered up to the *French*, who almoſt, with no pains wan all *Normandy*, and made good all *France*, for themſelves, except *Callis*. The Duke of *York*, who ſhould now help the *Engliſh* in *France*, was fain to go to ſtill the *Iriſh* that were up, he quickly pacified them, whereby he wan the peoples hearts very much, and much augmented his own affairs.

But when all things went not as they ſhould do in *France*, and *Sommerſet* was held to be the cauſe of all, and after him *Suffolk*, Many complaints by conſent of the Lower-Houſe of Parliament were alleadged againſt him, whereof he was found guilty, and caſt into Priſon, but he is ſuddenly ſet at liberty: But a new ſitting being ſummoned at the inſtance of the Lower-

Houſe he was baniſhed for five years, but whilſt he ſailed into *France*, he was intercepted by the *Engliſh*, and his Head cut off, leaving his Body diſgracefully on the ſhoar, and ſo the death of the Duke of *Gloceſter* was paid for. *Richard* Duke of *York* in the mean time having won the *Iriſh* hearts, gave the firſt ſtep to end the differences between the White Roſe and the Red, and for a beginning of his own Right to the Crown, for he deſcended from *Lyonel* Duke of *Clarence*, the third Son to the third *Edward*. Nor was it difficult to change the ſtate of the Kingdom, when ſo many abuſes and errours that were ſo well known to the common people, were crept in. And King *Henry* wholly unfit for the Government, as the people would ſay, by whoſe fooliſh negligence, *France* and *Normandy* were loſt. The men of *Kent* by the perſwaſion of *Yorke*, gave their Votes to *John Mortimer*, and with a great and well appointed Army they march toward *London*, *Mortimer* himſelf commanding them. The Army made a ſtay between *Eltham* and *Greenwich*, and then they ſent up their Complaints to the King and Parliament, concerning the preſent ſtate of the Kingdom, and amongſt the reſt they petition, That the Dukes of *York*, *Buckingham*, and *Exceter*, may be reſtored to their places, and former favour, there was no anſwer given, but a crying out to their Arms. But the men of *Kent*, when they were come to the Battell, killing both the *Staffords*, who commanded the Army, they put the Kings Forces to flight, whereupon the greateſt part of the Kings men fell off, for they came running by companies to

Mor-

Mortimer, vvhoſe Forces thus increaſed wonderfully; vvherefore the King fled to *Killingworth* Caſtle in the County of *Warwick*, expecting the iſſue. By his departure *Mortimer* grew more bold, and came to the Suburbs of *London*, and then poſſeſſing himſelfe of the Bridge, he came into *London*, doing no wrong to any man, for his Army was very well diſciplined, to keep down the violence of the Souldiers, whereby he won the affections of many, but afterwards the Men of *Kent*, being ſharpned with hope of the prey, fell upon ſome of the richer Citizens, which was very ill reſented by all. *Mortimer* was now Maſter of *London*, and he cut off the Heads of ſome of thoſe that were the Miniſters of thoſe Errours, as *John Say*, Chief-Treaſurer of *England*, and his Son in Laws, and ſome others. But the *Londoners* deteſting his haughtineſſe, arm themſelves, and craving help from *Scales* the Lord Lievtenant of the Tower, with ſuch Forces as they had collected, *Mathew Gogthus* being their Captain, in the night they fall upon *Mortimers* Army, that were in the Suburbs of St. *Georges* on the other ſide of the Thames; But the *Kentiſh* men repulſe them with ſuch violence that the *Londoners* were forced to give ground, and to leave the Bridge to the Conquerours; who hereupon being inraged, fell to caſt in fire to burne the Houſes upon the Bridge, and ſo put a great fright upon the City, and made a great ſlaughter. At laſt their heat began to remit, and theſe men of *Kent* began to deteſt the wickedneſſe *Mortimer* had done, and deſired to return home again, vvhich when the King underſtood, he ſent

his Seal for their Pardon, and for all his men being gone from him. *Mortimer* was left without a Guard, who thinking to escape by flight, was taken and slain.

This tumult was appeased, but a farre greater arose shortly after, for *York* depending upon his Right comes to *London*, under pretence of Complaints against his Adversaries, and especially against *Sommerset* (who had lost *France*, and was now come home) but the truth was to make a Party, he obtained the help of *Norfolk*, and the Earls of *Sarisbury* and *Devonshire* to assist him, and so marching into *Wales*, he quickly raised an Army. The King hearing this, prepares his Forces also, and collecting Forces he made haste thither with the Duke of *Sommerset*; Both the Armies meet at last, and the King sending Messengers, asked *York*, What should be the cause of so great a Tumult? Who cast all the fault on the Kings evill Counsellours, and chiefly upon *Sommerset*, promising that if he were cast into Prison, until such time as he might be tried, that then he would disband all his Army.

Hereupon *Sommerset* is cast into Prison under a colour, and *York* gave his Passe-port, which being done, the King went toward *London* with *York*: But *Sommerset* who before was cast into prison, being now set at liberty, accompanied the King, and in his stead *York* was brought like a Prisoner before the King. At last they come to *London*, and there grew a hot dispute between these two Dukes, before the Kings Councel, the one accusing the other of Treason, the matter came at last to this head, That *York* should

should take a solemn Oath to be true to the King, and should go toward his Castle *Walmere*, for the report was that *Edward* Earl of *Marsh*, Sonne and Heir to *York*, was now drawing up with an Army. And in the mean time a Messenger came from *Burdeaux*, craving help against the *French*. *John Talbot* Earl of *Shrewsbury* is sent thither, who after he had behaved himself gallantly, was slain with a Gun. The *French* by his death recover all they had lost except *Burdeaux*.

In the mean while the Duke of *York* did his best to allure the mindes of the Subjects, and then gaining the Nobility to his side, who were all offended with *Sommerset*, and joyning the Earls of *Sarisbury* and *Warwick* with him, he prevailed so farre that *Sommerset* in the Kings absence was sent to the Tower. But *Henry* when he heard that, though he were sick, and returning to *London*, he not only sets him at Liberty, he makes him Governour of *Calis*, and of all the other places in *France*, which thing so provoked *York*, that he and his Assistants March to *London* with a great Army. The King with *Sommerset*, *Buckingham*, and his Sonne *Humphrey*, the Earl of *Northumberland*, and a sufficient Army goes against them. At St. *Albans* the Armies came in sight one of the other. *York* sent Letters in the Morning to the King, requiring *Sommerset* to be delivered up to him, that he might be tried, the King refusing this, he makes the first On-set, *Sommerset*, and with him the Earl of *Northumberland* and *Humphrey* Earl of *Stafford* fell in the Battel, and five thousand men with them. Many were wounded and

taken; The King himself, who had fled into a Countrey-mans house for fear of the weapons, was taken by the Conspiratours; This Battel fell on *May* the 23th, and the 18th year of his Raign. But *York*, when his Adversary was dead, commands his Followers to abstain from fighting, and goes with the King to *London*. Then a Parliament was called, and he is freed from all fault, and made Protector of the King and Kingdome. The Earl of *Sarisbury* was made Chancellour, and *Warwick* Governour of *Callis*. For procuring which places every one was very watchfull. But the Queen not enduring the Authority of *York*, she never left urging *Buckingham* with the Death of his Sonne, and young *Sommerset* with the Death of his Father; and when she had sufficiently incensed them, she goes to *Greenwich*, and there she holds a Councel, commanding *York* and his Confederates to renounce their places; But they refused to do it. Then with subtilty mingled with flattery she intercepts them, and did all the mischief she could, but all in vain, yet they, least they might give cause of greater troubles, retire themselves, some to one place, some to another. But sending Messengers one to another, they came all to *London* with their Forces provided, and by the Mediation of the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and others, there was an Act of Oblivion granted for all that had been done, and Peace was concluded on both sides, and all is confirmed with a solemn Shew of Religion; Yet they held not long, for occasion being taken from a quarrel that happened between one of the Kings, and of the Earl of *Warwicks* Servants

vants, they endeavoured to lay hold on *Warwick*, but he fore-seeing the danger, with Post-horse, makes haste to *York* to the Duke, and to his Father Earl of *Sarisbury*, vvhom he acquainted with the busines, but he going on board the Navy that vvas ready by the shoar (for he was Admiral of the Sea) made haste to *Callis*.

In the mean time *Sarisbury* goes to the King with 5000 Souldiers, that he might acquaint him with the injury done to his Sonne, and of the inveterate hatred of the Queen, vvhich was now apparent. But *Audley*, vvho at the command of the Queen, and of the Duke of *Buckingham*, had raised an Army of 10000 men, went against him, and was beaten, 2400 were slain, the rest fled to save themselves.

York supposing it was in vain to dally any longer, raising an Army, with the Earls of *Sarisbury* and of *Warwicke*, he provides for Warre, but a Treaty being had between both sides, and a pardon granted by the King for all faults, many forsook the Dukes, and all the Counsels of the Conspiratours were detected, with which *York* vvas brought to desperation, and fled vvith his younger Sonne Earl of *Rutland* first into *Wales*, then into *Ireland*. When the private Souldiers had procured pardon, the Earls of *Marsh*, *Sarisbury*, and *Warwick* took their voyage for *Callis*, but some of the principall were put to death, and a Parliament being called, they were all convinced and condemned for Treason. Also *Sommerset* at the Queens interceſſion was made Governour of *Callis*, but when he thought to enter upon his Government, he was shot at from the Town, and was

forced to betake himself to some other place. The Queen hearing this began to rage, and commanded all the Ships that were in *Sandwich* Haven to be fitted for *Callis*: But *John Dynham* for the Earl of *Marsh* his sake, took them all, and with *Riverius* their Admirall brought them to *Callis*.

The Earl of *Warwick* also sailed into *Ireland* to *York*, and consulting with him, returned safe for *Callis*. *Simon Montfort* was Warden of the Cinque-ports, and guarded all the Inrodes that *Warwick* might not come into *England*, but he being admonished of it by the Spies he had, fastning upon his Navy not yet ready, he plundered *Sandwich*, and brought *Simon* with a great booty to *Callis*. And when he understood that the *Kentish* men desired his presence, he came the second time to *Sandwich*, where the Lord *Cobham* with a great multitude of the Nobility joyned with him; Wherefore being appointed with an Army of 25000 Men, he marched presently to *London*, and possessed himself of the Tower, whereby he afterwards did the *Londoners* a great deal of mischief. But hearing that his Father the Earl of *Sarisbury* was coming on, he passed over the Thames and joyned with him.

The King with the Dukes of *Buckingham* and *Sommerset*, and a well appointed Army, marches against them, at *Northampton* he came in sight of the Enemy. The Battel began on both sides, and they fought vehemently, *Humphrey* Duke of *Buchingham*, with *John Talbot*, the Earl of *Shrewsbury*, *Thomas* Lord *Egremont*, *John Bellomont*, and others were slain, and on one

one and the other ſide ten thouſand men. This was in the year 1460. The Queen eſcaped with the Duke of *Sommerſet* and his Sonne, but the King more mindfull of his prayers than of the Battel, was taken and brought priſoner to *London*. *Warwick* preſently got poſſeſſion of the Tower, and *Scales* the Liveteuant, whileſt he thought to get away croſſing the Thames in a diſguiſe, was diſcovered, taken and beheaded. The Duke of *York* receiving a Meſſage of this Succeſs, leaving *Ireland*, came Poſt for *London*, vvhere at a ſolemn meeting, he layes open his Right to the Crown of *England*, deriving his Pedigree from *Lyonel* the third Son of *Edward* the third, the elder brother of *John* of *Gaunt*, the Father of *Henry* the fourth the Uſurper. But he deſired not the Kingdom, unleſs his Right vvere made clear to all men; Wherefore a Councel being held, the Title of a King is granted to King *Henry* ſo long as he lived, and *York* is named to ſucceed him. The Queen all this while muſtering an Army in *Scotland*, invades *England* daily; *York* with his younger Sonne of *Rutland*, and with the Earl of *Sarisbury* went againſt her, leaving for a Guard to King *Henry*, the Earls of *Warwick* and *Norfolk*, but he being circumvented by treachery, was ſlain, and 3000 of his Souldiers with him; nor did ſhe ſpare the Earl of *Rutland*, a childe of twelve years old, though he begged for his life with tears. *Sarisbury*, who was taken alive, and as many as were taken with him, were by the fury of a Woman, all beheaded. This was the end of *Richard Plantagenet* Duke of *York*.

The

The Earl of *Ulster* hearing of his Fathers death, managed his business with more vehemency now than before, raising an Army of 23000 Men, he overcame the Earls of *Pembroke* and *Ormont*, he took *Owen Tewdor* alive, who had married *Katharine*, Mother to *Henry* the sixth, and chopped off his Head. But the Queen insulting at the death of the Duke of *York*, marched toward *London* with her Forces, and was met by the Duke of *Norfolk*, and the Earl of *Warwick*, who durst have given her Battel, but by the treachery of their followers that forsook them, they were forced to flie for to save themselves. King *Henry* by that Victory came again into the Queens Power; But in the mean time *Edward* Earl of *Marsh* by the general Vote of all Orders was crowned King, according as it was enacted in Parliament, and gathering a great Army at *Tanton*, he met the King and the Queen, and joyning Battel with them, he overcame their Forces, the most valiant fell in the fight, the rest fled to save their lives. The King and Queen escaped into *Scotland*, leaving the Kingdom to *Edward* the fourth of that Name.

EDWARD *the Fourth, King of* England *and* France.

Eduardus IIII. D. G. Rex Ang. Fran. et Hib.

Anno 1461.

EDWARD having got the Crown at last, could not peaceably enjoy it; For *Henry* that had fled into *Scotland*, by the assistance of the *Scots*, makes a new Warre upon him: *Edward* meets him with equal Forces, and fought him at *Exham*, putting *Henry* and his Sould-

Souldiers to their heels, thirty thousand men were slain on both sides, *Edward* giving the Command to spare none. The Duke of *Somerset* who formerly had fallen from *Henry* to *Edward*, despairing of the success, presently changed his minde at the report of so great an Army, and revolted to *Henry*, was taken and beheaded. *Henry* again retires for *Scotland* waiting for another opportunity for his business; But afterwards returning for *England* in a disguise, he was taken by the *English*, and delivered up to *Edward*, and by him, that the state of the Kingdom might be the more quiet, he was cast into prison.

In the mean time *Edward* took care of his houshold affairs, and he married his Sister *Margaret* to *Philip* Duke of *Burgundies* Sonne *Charles*, the Earl of *Warwick* being not a little mad at it, who hated *Burgundy* worse than the plague, whence and from other causes a grievous quarrel rose between them: For *Warwick* hating the King, drew to his faction his Brothers the Archbishop of *York*, and the Marquess *Montacute*, by a set speech, and after that *George* Duke of *Clarence* the Kings Brother, marrying his Sister to him, and with the Duke he takes his voyage toward *Callis*, for he was yet Governour of the City, giving order to his Brothers in his absence to raise Tumults in *Yorkshire*. They carefully observed what they had in charge, and quickly causing a Tumult, the common people, as it usually happens, in a blinde rage, though they be raised against the innocent, march to *London* armed, that there they might seek for remedy of mischiefs, they

knew

knew not what. *Edward* hearing of this sedition, sends *William Herbert* Earl of *Pembroke*, hoping to subdue the people, who was no sooner come, but they put him to flight. In the mean while *Warwick* upon this rumour, with the Duke of *Clarence* arrived in *England* from *Calis*, and so with joynt Forces they provide for another Battel. *Edward* no way dismayed with the first loss, sends *Pembroke* again with a new Army to fight them. But when they fought, his Army was beaten, and he was taken prisoner, and he was beheaded at *Warwick*, with the other Nobility that fell into their hands. Then there was a Treaty of Peace, and Messengers being sent on both parts, the King being animated with hopes of Agreement, dealt the more securely, which *Warwick* was not ignorant of, and therefore falling upon the Kings Tents at night, killing the Guard, he takes the King prisoner, who never dreamt of it, and sends him first to *Warwick*, then into *Yorkshire* to *Middleham* Castle to be secured. But the King flattering the Keepers, and bribing them with money, by their connivance shortly came to *York*, where the Citizens received him lovingly, and so raising an Army by the assistance of *Hastings*, he came safe to *London*. Then there began a Treaty at *London* for Peace, whither *Warwick* and the Duke of *Clarence* were come, but this had no effect. For they being stomackfull, and very furious, the matter could not come so farre as Peace, wherefore all being left undone, they depart, and *Warwick* musters new Forces, of which he makes *Robert Wells* sonne to *Richard*, Commander in Chief. But

the

the King when he found he must engage again in Battel, besides his expectation, sent for *Roberts* Father *Richard*, and his Kinsman *Thomas Dimoke* Knight to come to him, who came upon the Kings promise of free Conduct; The King commanded them to call off *Robert* from taking Arms, and mustering Forces suddenly, he goes against them with *Thomas* and *Richard*, and when they were come to the Enemy, and found that *Robert* would not hearken to his Fathers admonitions, but held up his Arms still, he contrary to his promise (a most wicked example) causeth both the Father and Kinsman to lose their Heads. They fell to fighting, and *Roberts* Forces were discomfited, he himself was taken alive, and immediately was beheaded. *Warwick* at the news hereof, with the Duke, not knowing what course to steer, presently sailed into *France* to King *Lewis*, who entertained him magnificently. Queen *Margaret*, Wife to *Henry* came also presently with Prince *Edward*, who took counsel together and made a Covenant between the King, the Earl and the Queen (*Edward* in vain dehorting from it) and *Warwicks* Daughter was betrothed to *Edward*, and promise made on both sides, that they would never cease untill the Kingdom should be restored either to *Henry*, or to *Edward* his Sonne. A mighty Army is raised, and a vast Fleet rode at Anchor in the mouth of the *Sienna*. *Warwick* invited by Letters from his friends, with part of his Army, and a Navy prepared, with the Earls of *Oxford* and *Pembroke* came safe to *Dartmouth*. (The Queen, who was not yet ready, was to follow when she heard

heard good news) though the Duke of *Burgundy* observed his motion. So soon as he was landed, and it was published that he was arrived, 'tis wonderfull what multitudes of people ran to him, with which being fortified, he presently moves toward *London*. But *Edward* not expecting an Enemy, and leaving the care of raising Forces till another time, with his Brother *Richard* Duke of *Gloceſter*, took Shipping at *Lyn*, a Sea Town, and ſailed into *Flanders* to *Charles* of *Burgundy*; to his own great diſadvantage. Queen *Elizabeth* being near to her travell, fled to *Weſtminſter*, and made that her *Aſylum*, where ſhe was delivered of her Sonne *Edward*. *Warwick* in the interim without any oppoſition came to *London*, and marching to the Tower, ſet King *Henry* at liberty; and clothing him in his Kingly Ornaments, attending him through the midſt of *London* to S^t^. *Pauls* Church, after thanks given to God, he ſets him in his Throne. Then a Parliament was called, and all King *Henry* had Enacted was ratified, and the Acts of King *Edward* were made void: *Edward* with his followers was baniſhed as an Enemy of the Kingdom.

Edward in the mean time nothing diſmay'd at this change, raiſing an Army (by the help of *Charles*) of 12000 Men, and with 18 Ships, landed in *Yorkſhire*. His Army was ſo ſmall, that he durſt attempt nothing, only ſent to perſwade the people there, but all in vain, for they either by fear or for reſpect to *Warwick*, would not falſifie their promiſe; but when he gave out that he was not come for the Kingdom, but to recover his Patrimony the Dukedom of

York,

York, many running to him, he grew somewhat stronger, and so goes to *York*. But the Townsmen being warned by Letters from *Warwick*, would not let *Edward* come in. He spake fairly to the Citizens, and desired them that they would help their Lord, not to get the Kingdom, but his ancient Inheritance, and so taking a solemn Oath that he would attempt nothing against King *Henry* toward getting the Crown, he was admitted to enter within their Wals. But shortly after it appeared more clearly what his intention was; for great ones use to pretend Religion to serve their turns, which they make light of, that with the greatest perjury they may compass what they desire. He presently put a Garrison to secure the Town for himself, and then hearing that the Enemy made no great haste, he marches to *Nottingham*, to whom many Noble men came, when they saw him fortified with a strong Army. The very Duke of *Clarence* distrusting *Henries* side, under a pretence of a Parley with his Brother, came willingly to joyn with him.

Warwick also was solicited to fall off, but he stuck fast to King *Henry*. Then *Edward* in full confidence of his Army came up to *London*. The Citizens were all frighted, hearing that the Duke of *Clarence* was revolted, and the people presently ran to meet *Edward*, and with a great applause saluted him for their King. *Sommerset* and the rest that followed *Henry* shift for themselves by flight, leaving *Henry* in a Bishops Palace, who was presently taken by *Edward* and committed to his former custody. Then giving a generall pardon, he won all the peoples hearts.

War-

Warwick in the mean while muſtering a gallant Army, leads them to *London*, and finding that *Henry* was caſt into Priſon, he ſtopt at St. *Albons*. *Edward* preſently goes againſt him with a mighty power of men, which augmented daily by the coming of more Forces; when both Armies came in ſight, at the break of day the Trumpets ſound to Battell. They fight ſtoutly on both ſides, *Edward* with more men, *Henry* with more vertue, yet Valour is vanquiſhed by Force; *Warwick* when he deſpaired of the Victory, rid into the midſt of the enemy, and died gallantly with his Brother the Marqueſs, ten thouſand are ſlain, *Sommerſet* with *Oxford* flies into *Wales*.

The Earl of *Exceter* taking *aſylum* at *Weſtminſter*, *Edward* like a Conquerour, with King *Henry* (for he brought him along with him) enters *London*.

In the mean while the fame was that Queen *Margaret* was landed in *England* with a great Army, and was corroborated for Warre by the Earl of *Sommerſet*, *Devonſhire*, *Pembroke*, and others that joyned with her. Wherefore *Edward* being ſure to meet the enemy every where, removes to *Oxford* with his Army. At length he purſues *Margaret*, whilſt ſhe thought to march into *Wales*, and ſhe by the unexpected coming of *Pembroke*, which was very material, taking counſel with *Sommerſet* what to do, gave him Battell; the fight was fought at *Tewcksbury*, and the diſpute was long and doubtfull, at laſt *Edward* prevailed, and all *Margarets* men almoſt were killed. The Earl of *Devonſhire*, and *Sommerſet's* Brother, and

many Nobles were slain; *Margaret*, Prince *Edward*, the Duke of *Somerset*, and others, about twenty Knights were taken, and all of them, except the Queen and Prince *Edward*, were beheaded in two dayes. But *Edward* when he was brought to conferre with the King, and he answered more boldly than was convenient, he was most cruelly slain by the standers by. *George* Duke of *Clarence*, *Richard* Duke of *Glocester*, *Thomas Grey* Marquesse of *Dorset*, and *William Hastings*, the Queen afterward, was set free for a Ransome, and sailed into *France*, and lived alwayes a sorrowfull and languishing life. *Edward* having thus got the Victory, comes in triumph to *London*.

In the interim *Falconbridge*, Sonne to the Earl of *Kent*, who was made Admiral of the Sea by *Warwick*, when he had long plaid the Pirate, coming into *Kent*, raised a great force of *Kentish* men, and entred into *London*: But the Major of the City raising an Army, fell suddenly upon him, and took all his booty from him, chasing him away, and killing many of his men. *Faulconbridge* was taken afterwards and his head cut off. *Pembroke* when he saw all was lost, shifting away from the snares that were laid for his life, and being more at ease by the death of *Wagham*, who lay in wait for him with *Henry* his Nephew by his Brother Earl of *Richmond*, and some few of his new friends arrived in *France*. *Edward*, that all things for the future might be more calme, tamed the audaciousnesse of the *Kentish* men, who had last taken up Arms against him, partly by punishment, partly by threats. Also King *Hen-*

ry

ry that he might give no occaſion to new riſings, was killed in the Tower by the Duke of *Gloceſter*; his Body was buried with no pomp, but the Parricides, and the Authours of his death, (as it ſhall be rehearſed) were afterwards puniſhed for murdering him.

He had reigned thirty eight years and ſix moneths, he had an honeſt minde, a comely perſonage, and was more like a Saint than a King.

Edward to blot out all the footſteps of Rebellion, caſt *George* Archbiſhop of *York* into priſon, who was afterwards ſet at liberty, yet died of grief of minde. Alſo he caſt the Earle of *Oxford* into priſon, where he kept him twelve years. Others in other places were either captivated or put to death. Then that the Rebels might not fly away to neighbour Nations, he made Truce with *James* King of *Scotland* for twenty years. The Earls of *Pembroke* and *Richmond* eſcaped into *France*, where they were courteouſly entertained by the Duke of *Britain*. But afterwards, when as *Edward* required that they ſhould be delivered up to him, and could not prevail, they were kept more carefully by the Duke. Then a Parliament being called, *Henries* Decrees were nulled, and *Edwards* confirmed, and thoſe that were baniſhed their Country for his ſake, as enemies, are called home again; and the Kings Exchequer being extreamly waſted, Subſidies are requeſted. In the *interim* Warre burning between *Lewis* the King of *France*, and the Duke of *Burgundy* (to whom many Princes of *France* joyned themſelves) abhorring the manners of

Lewis that were grievous to them; *Edward* himſelf, that he might not be wanting to aſſiſt his friend that he was bound unto for ſo many courteſies, provided an Army and a Fleet and ſailed to *Callis*. *Charles* was preſently with him, and congratulates his Victory over the Rebels, and invites him that was willing to enter upon a new Warre: But *Lewis* being mightily afraid of two ſuch potent enemies, ſent Embaſſadours to *Edward*. The two Kings held a large Conference, who met at *Picquigny*, where a League was made for many yeares, 70000 Ducats being paid to *Edward* for his charges, and 50000 to be paid yearly, and *Elizabeth* Daughter to *Edward* was married to *Charles* Sonne to *Lewis*: And ſo Peace being agreed upon, *Charles* and *Luxenburgh* that joyned with him in the Warre, being not a little vexed at it, *Edward* came firſt to *Callis*, and from thence to *England*. *Luxenburgh* was afterwards taken in fight and loſt his Head at *Paris*. *Edward* though he had ſetled Peace at home and abroad, yet thinking nothing ſafe enough for him, whilſt *Henry* Earl of *Richmond* was alive, whoſe right to the Crown he much feared; wherefore ſending Meſſengers to the Duke of *Britain*, what by gifts, what by promiſes, he prevailed to have the Earl delivered: But the Duke repenting what he had yeilded to, called back the gallant young man that was now gone on his journey to be put to death, and preſerved him from it, ſending *Edwards* Embaſſadours without their prey home again. *Edward* who was bountifull to all, ſhewed himſelf cruel to none but his Brother the Duke

of

of *Clarence*, whom he ſuffered to be drown'd in a Pipe of *Malmſey*. The Warre began again with the *Scots*, the Duke of *Albany* the brother of King *James* being the cauſe of it. *Richard* Duke of *Gloceſter* was ſent into *Scotland*, but the *Scot* not truſting to his ſmall Forces, ſued for peace. The Duke of *Albany*, who was the Authour of the Warre, and knew that he was hated by his Brother for it, fled into *France* and was killed there in a fight on Horſback. Now it remained that *Edward* ſhould make Warre with the *French*, who had not kept the Articles of agreement, but he was conquered by another enemy which he foreſaw not, for falling into a new diſeaſe not underſtood by the Phyſitians, he died in a few dayes in the 50 year of his age, and of his Reign the 23. In the year of our Lord 1483. and lieth buried at *Windſor*.

EDWARD the Fifth.

Eduardus. V. D. G. Rex
Ang: Fran: et Hib:

RICHARD *the Third*, *King of* England *and* France.

Richardus. III. D. G. Rex Ang: Fran: et Hib:

Anno 1483.

EDWARD the fourth being dead, his eldest Sonne EDWARD succeeded; but he in his Reign was under Governours, *Antony Rivariis* his Uncle, *Thomas Wagham* Chamberlain, and *Richard Grey*, Knights, who being sent for by the Queens Letters, came in haste to

London with the Prince. Alſo *Richard* Duke of *Gloceſter*, who after his Brothers death had the chiefe power, was at *York*, but hearing of the Kings death, he came to *London* vvith a ſmall Army: For he by order from his Brother *Edward* vvas to govern the Prince in his nonage. So ſoon as his Brother vvas dead, he was mindfull to uſurp the Kingdom: he coming to *London* overtook this young King *Edward* on the vvay, whom he preſently took into his charge, and ſent his Tutours, *Riverius*, *Wagham*, and *Grey*, to *Pomfret* Caſtle to be kept ſafe, vvhich thing being known at *London*, the Queen, vvho well knew the perverſe minde of *Richard*, vvith her other Sonne *Richard*, and her Daughters, fled to *Weſtminſter* for refuge, that ſhe might be the more ſecure from *Richards* violence.

Richard in the mean time came to *London* vvith *Edward*, and went to the Biſhop of *Londons* houſe to reſide. But he not content with *Edwards* being in his power, that he might the more ſafely look to his buſineſſe, endeavours to get the other Brother that was fled to Sanctuary with his Mother, under a colour of comforting the Kings ſorrowfull minde; and drawing the Lords to be of the ſame opinion, he ſent thither, amongſt others, *Thomas* Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, vvho with fair ſpeeches mingled with threats, brings the innocent child from his Mothers Arms.

Richard now having got vvhat he aimed at, ſent him to the Tower in great pomp, but vvith great lamentation. He in the mean time, vvhat by rewards, vvhat by Religious diſſimulation, and an affected proneneſs of his own minde, laboured to knit unto himſelf the mindes of the

Lords

Lords and Commons, to cover the great deſire he had of the Crown deeply rooted in his heart, ſo that no man could tell vvhither his purpoſes tended. But *Haſtings*, a man of an honeſt heart, did daily preſs that due Honour ſhould be given to the King; vvhom *Richard*, either becauſe he vvas troubleſom to him, or elſe ſaw too farre into the buſineſs, labours to diſpatch above all the reſt, and ſo craftily charging him of that he vvas no way guilty of, he commanded the Souldiers that vvere ready for ſuch ſervice, to kill him preſently, he being neither queſtioned nor found guilty. The fault was laid on this vvorthy man, that he had committed adultery with one *Joan* King *Edward* the fourth's Concubine, vvhom *Richard* accuſed purpoſely, as though vvith the Queen-Mother he had made the King impotent by Magick Art. Alſo he caſt into priſon the Prelates of *York* and *Ely*, with *Stanley*: but this man was ſhortly releaſed. He ſent others away to other places, that they might not obſtruct his riſing to the Crown. Then by Letters he gave vvarning to the Keeper of *Pomfret* Caſtle, that he ſhould behead *Riverius*, *Gray*, and *Wagham*, vvho was over-obedient to the command. Alſo he ſecured himſelf vvith a ſtrong Guard, (as the manner is for Tyrants to be afraid of every thing) and to deceive the credulous people, he had a conſultation vvith one *Ralph Shaw*, a very famous Divine, vvhom the people much admired, ſtoutly boaſting that he was the true Sonne of his Father *Richard*, but that his Brother *Edward* was a Baſtard, and he farther deſired him that he would ſay ſo much in the Pulpit concerning

his

his right, unto the people; and that he was a Man. *Edward* but a Childe, unfit for Government, and by his imbecillity the Common-wealth might be ruined, and so forth. *Ralph* whether for fear or madness, easily yeilds to him, and having made a Sermon from a Text fit for the purpose, he began to speak freely to the people, threatning great unhappiness to those men who should preferre a bastard before lawfull succession. The people deceived by the Authority of the Preacher, and frighted by threats, did wonderfully wayer this way and that way, and began to prefer *Richard* a Man, before *Edward* a Childe, to wish for a change of the Governour, to fore-speak all the worst, to accuse the innocent Mother for a Whore. But *Ralph* being admonished of this thing by his friends, and returning to a better minde, was so much ashamed of it, that afterward he lived privately and died of grief. Also the Duke of *Buckingham* a little after making a speech to the *Londoners* in Counsell, did not spare to exhort them, and to admonish them of their duty, boasting moreover highly of *Richards* goodness and mildness of minde; to him a great part consented, part followed their leaders, not daring to resist, part thought it necessary to obey the time and the reason of things, and so all swore fidelity to *Richard*. In the year 1483. Presently they go to *Richard*, and acquaint him what was done, he began to refuse it, and to exhort them to continue faithfull unto *Edward* their young King, to detest such a damnable wickedness, but at last, as it were, against his will, he received the Ensignes of the Kingdom, and with his Wife *Anne* was Crowned King. He

He labours to make that power good by force which he got by craft, for being compaſſed with a choice number of Souldiers for his Guard, he thought himſelf ſafe enough from all injury. Yet he feared the multitude of the *Londoners*, for Tyrants think themſelves ſafe in no place, wherefore he reſolves to go to *York*, having ſetled the buſineſs at *London*. But in the way (when he hoped for no quiet whilſt his Nephews were alive) he writ Letters to the Lievtenant of the Tower, *Robert Brakenbury*, that ſo ſoon as he could, by any means, he ſhould deſtroy the young King *Edward* and his Brother in the Tower, when he refuſed and delayed; he gave that charge to *James Tyrel*, who coming to *London* in great poverty, he ſtifled the young children, caſting pillows upon them. The childrens death was divulged, *Richard* not being againſt it, it is wonderfull how great amazement ſeized on the minds of all men, every one lamented the unhappineſs of the children, and pitied them, and they began to ſpeak what hopes they had of him, who ſpared not his own near kindred, but ſhed their blood, to ſay nothing of the Mother and her Daughters. Certainly, the immortall God, who will not ſuffer great ſins to go unpuniſhed, revenged on the innocent children the perjury of their Father committed at *York*, and the death of the Duke of *Clarence*, whom he wickedly murdered.

But the Duke of *Buckingham*, who had taken ſuch pains for *Richard*, began now to deteſt his horrid wickedneſs, and fell away from him, took counſell with the Biſhop of *Ely*, who was com-

committed to his cuſtody, how to reſtore *Henry* Earl of *Richmond* (to whom the Kingdom of right belonged next unto, for that he deſcended from *John* of *Gaunt* Duke of *Lancaſter*, his great Grandfather) and to root out *Richard* a monſter of men: Theſe therefore diſcloſed their buſineſs to others, they preſently ſend away *Hugh Conway*, and *Thomas Ranmey* into *Brittany*, who ſhould acquaint the Earl of the combination, and he ſhould impart it to the Duke of *Brittany*.

The Duke, though he were much importuned by *Richards* Letters to keep *Henry* in priſon, promiſed aſſiſtance.

Richard in the mean time who had notice of the conſultations of *Buckingham* ſent for him again and again to come unto him, but when he refuſed to come, they fall to their Arms on both ſides. The Duke muſtering preſently ſome *Welſh* Forces and others, came to *Gloceſter* over the River to meet *Richard* that had a mighty Army with him. But the Souldiers vvhich he had procured voluntarily, rather than for their pay, were not very firme, but ran from him before he came in ſight of the enemy. The Duke was now almoſt left all alone, only his Lacky remained with him, who was forced to fly to ſhift for himſelf, and went to *Humphrey Banniſters*, he unmindfull of all former favours, delivered him afterwards to *Richard*, who cut off his Head. When this was commonly reported, all the Conſpiratours ran one one way, and another another way, ſome to places of refuge, ſome to the Duke of *Brittany* to the Earl.

Richard

Richard had heard in the mean time, that the Duke did not onely not hurt the Earl, but had reſolved to aſſiſt him, wherefore he preſently provides a Fleet, that if perhaps the Earl ſhould come, he might repulſe him every where from the *Engliſh* Coaſts.

Henry in the mean time with forty Ships, and 5000 *Brittains* ſailed for *England*; but a tempeſt aroſe and ſcattered his Ships, and he almoſt was quit of all his Forces, and was driven to *Cornwall*, vvhere coming on Land, when he ſaw a great Army he retreated to his Shipping again, weighed Anchor, and ſaild to Sea. And being very penſive vvhen he heard of *Buckinghams* death, void of all counſell, he returned again to *Brittany* in *France*. But by the coming of the Nobility he took heart once more, and promiſed before the Altar, to marry *Elizabeth*, *Edwards* Daughter, if the buſineſs ſhould ſucceed to his minde, and ſo afreſh an Oath of fidelity was taken by them all.

Richard in the mean time did rage fiercely againſt all thoſe that followed the Earl, whereſoever he could lay hold on them. *Thomas* Earl of *Dorſet*, who had fled to him, was baniſhed both by Sea and Land.

Alſo he made a Covenant with the *Scotch* King, and confirmed it, giving his Siſter *Anne* to the *Scotch* Kings Sonne. *Richard* in the interim layes new traps for Earl *Henry*, by corrupting the Dukes Treaſures with money. But he eſcaped them, the matter being detected by Biſhop *Morton*. When the fraud was known to the Duke himſelf, he was ſo enraged againſt

the Treasurer, that he caused this wicked man, for that and other wicked deeds to be hanged. The Earl *Henry* was now come into *France*, where the Earl of *Oxford* escaped from his imprisonment, came and joyned with him, and promised his faithfull endeavour in all affairs: To whom some Noble men, that studied at *Paris*, came to assist, willingly offering their aid, amongst whom was *Richard Fox* the famousest Scholar in those dayes, whom the Earl took to be of his privy-Counsell, and when he had gaind the Kingdom afterwards, he made him Bishop of *Winchester*.

But *Richard* to hinder Earl *Henry's* Marriage with *Elizabeth*, partly by flattery, partly by fear, partly by promise, he prevailed so farre with Queen *Elizabeth*, that she should entrust her Daughters with him, and should write her Letters to her Sonne the Marques of *Dorset*, who was near to Earl *Henry*, whereby she should command him to return home without delay, leaving the Earls society. That all things were now pacified, and that her family was received into the Kings favour. *Richard* all this while having gotten the Queens Daughters, that he might totally destroy the intention of *Henry*, he thought himself to marry *Elizabeth* his Brothers Daughter, his former Wife also was yet alive: But she also when other projects would not suit, was taken privately away by poyson. In the mean while he tries all means to win *Elizabeth* to affect him, and if he could not obtain her, he was resolved to joyn violence to his prayers. But he was so much urged with care and forraign fear, that he had no time for

lust

liſt to ſhew it ſelf. In the interim *Stanley* had a command to Muſter an Army, but he muſt not go forth, before he had given unto *Richard* for a pawn and pledge of his fidelity, his eldeſt Sonne the Lord *Strange*. A fame was alſo ſpread on purpoſe that *Henry* had implored help from the *French* in vain, and that there was no fear of his coming. *Richard* dealt ſomething careleſly and unwiſely, diſcharging the Navy he had ſent to ſcour the *Engliſh* Coaſts.

Henry was advertiſed how things ſtood, and arrived in *England* with but 2000 Souldiers in pay. Preſently *Rice Thomas*, and *John Savage*, two the moſt Potent men in *Wales*, having collected ſome Forces, came to joyn with *Henry*. *Pembroke* with ſome others did the like. *Stanley* though he wiſhed well, yet fearing leaſt his Sonne ſhould be miſerably tortured by the King, delayed his intention untill ſome other opportunity.

Richard all this time was wonderfull ſluggiſh and careleſs, but when he heard of the revolt of his Subjects, he raiſed what men he could ſcrape up, and went againſt *Henry*.

He pitched his Tent at *Boſworth* field, when he ſaw the enemy intended to fight, he alſo made ready his men: At laſt they fall on, and fought a ſharp Battell on both ſides. But *Stanley* who came later, in the heat of the Battell, brought freſh Forces and joyned with *Henry*, whereby he was not a little animated, for otherwiſe he was farre inferiour to *Richard* in men, and ſo takes heart again. The King himſelf at laſt entred the fight, who after he had given wou-

wonderfull tokens of his Valour, had killed *Henries* Standard-bearer, put *Henry* himself in danger, he was surrounded by multitudes of Souldiers, and fighting valiantly, was slain. *Henry* got the Victory by *Richards* death, for the Earl of *Northumberland*, who brought up the rear of *Richards* Army, as he came against his will, so he refused to fight any longer. Not above 1000 were slain of the Kings side, and of *Henries* side, hardly 100. The Nobility that yeilded were pardoned, and *Henry* had forthwith the Crown set on his Head, which they had taken from *Richards* Head, and he is saluted King by all with a generall acclamation. *Richards* body was found amongst the dead, and was buried with no Honour at *Leicester.*

HENRY *the Seventh, King of* England *and* France,

Henricus VII. D. G. Rex. *Ang: Fran: et Hib:*

Anno 1486.

HENRY came to the Kingdom both by Right and Valour, and was Crowned at *Weſtminſter*, Anno 1486, the day before the Calends of *November*.

Then calling a Parliament he is diſcharged of the Treaſon *Richard* laid to him, and he

gave Rewards and Honours to ſome that were grieved.

He married *Elizabeth* the Daughter to *Edward* the fourth, and by that Marriage the old quarrell between the White Roſe and the Red was ended. At his firſt entrance he kept a ſtrong Guard about him, either for his powers or Majeſty; vvhich cuſtom is continued to our dayes. The *Engliſh* Sweat was rife about this time, a diſeaſe never known before, it deſtroyed abundance of men, but the ſharper the diſeaſe was, the ſhorter time it laſted. Then new troubles aroſe in the North of *England*, which were eaſily vanquiſhed by *Lovels* flight, and *Staffords* death.

But a new tumult that grew from meer opinion and perſwaſion, gave cauſe for new cares, for one *Simon* a Prieſt reports falſly that a Scholar of his, vvho was very like (vvhich made the Prieſt the bolder to give it out) vvas the Sonne to *Edward* Duke of *Clarence* (vvhich was caſt into priſon a little before by *Henry*) and he ſaild with him into *Ireland*, and prevailed ſo much amongſt the Peers there, that the youth was ſaluted King at *Dublin*. Then obtaining help from *Margaret* wife to *Burgundy*, he comes into *England*, to vvhom thoſe Lords that favoured the cauſe of *Plantagenet* joyned themſelves, though they knew the fraud, yet they hoped to bring on the deſign. But *Henry* went againſt them in time, and after a moſt eager fight he ſlew the Earl of *Lincoln*, and other of the chief men that followed him. But he ſpared *Lambert* this counterfeit Earl, by reaſon of his youth and innocency, and he was made

made the Kings ſervant; *Simondus* eſcaped becauſe he was Prieſt.

Then ſending Embaſſadours into *Scotland*, he treated for peace, but when he could not procure it, in regard of the malice of the Subjects, and Truce was made for ſeven years. But a difference riſing between *Charles* King of *France*, and *Francis* Duke of *Brittany*, *Henry* that he might diſpleaſe neither ſide, being engaged to both, made himſelf Umpire to end the quarrel between them, but vvhen he could do nothing by his Embaſſadours, they fell to Arms.

Edward Lord *Vdevill* the Queens Uncle, without the knowledge of the King, aſſiſted the Duke of *Brittany* with 400 choice men, but the *French* afterwards getting the Victory, the Duke and they were all ſlain. The Duke being dead, the conteſt ended. In the mean time in *Yorkſhire* troubles aroſe, becauſe of Tribute required, one *John Chambers* was the Authour of them. *Henry* Earl of *Northumberland*, Governour of that Countrey, was baſely ſlain by one of the factious multitude, then they came on by Troops, *John Egrimont* Knight being their Leader. But the King fell on them preſently, and eaſily diſſipated the tumultuous rabble, puniſhing ſeverely the Authours of it: But *Egrimont* fled to *Margaret* into *Burgundy*, vvhich was the common place of refuge for the Rebels; yet there was nothing abated of the Tribute to be paid.

A great Tumult about that time fell in *Scotland*, the Subjects riſing againſt *James* King of *Scotland*, and they forced his Sonne *James* to

take part with them. *Henry* King of *England*, *Charles* King of *France*, and the Pope, could not reconcile this quarrel, and when the Subjects gave a harſh anſwer, the Battell began at *Strevelin*, where the Subjects got the Victory, and the King himſelf, though his Sonne was againſt it, was cruelly ſlain in a Mill. Then a jarring aroſe between *Frederick* the Emperour, and ſome Cities in *Flanders*; the *French* came to aſſiſt the Emperour: But *Henry* not enduring the *French* ſo near to *Callis*, ſent the Lord *Morley* with a ſupply of a thouſand men, who with two thouſand of his Souldiers vanquiſhed eight thouſand of the enemies, but he himſelf was ſlain. The *French* to revenge this loſs, had almoſt won *Newport*, but being frighted at the coming of the *Engliſh*, they loſt the Victory. *Maximilian* the Emperour, when he endeavoured to marry *Anne* Daughter to *Francis* Duke of *Brittany*, which he had betrothed by Embaſſadours, he is hindered by the *French* King, to whom he had eſpouſed his Daughter *Margaret*, for he divorcing *Margaret*, gaping after the Dukedom of *Brittany*, by force got *Anne* into his power, and ſolemnly made her his Wife. *Henry* was wonderfully offended at this fraud, and asked Subſidies from his Parliament, taking counſell to make a Warre upon the *French* King. At length he landed at *Callis* with a ſmall Army, and beſieged *Bononia*, but finding *Maximilian* unprepared, for vvhoſe ſake he had undertaken this Warre, he eaſily yeilded to make Peace, (obtaining from the *French* a great ſumme of Money, and a yearly revenue) and ſo returned for *England*. *Mar-*

garet

garet Wife to the Duke of *Burgundy*, alwayes ſtudied miſchief againſt the *Engliſh*, for ſhe bred up for ſome moneths in her Court, a certain young man vvho was called *Peterkin*, or *Perken Warbech*, and obtruded him upon the *Engliſh* Nation, for *Richard* the Sonne of *Edward* the fourth, vvho, was ſaid, to have been ſtifled. Many of the Nobility of *England*, either deceived by the appearance, or becauſe they deſired innovation, joyn with that ſuppoſed *Richard*; amongſt whom was *William Stanley*, who helped *Peter* with money, *Stanley* was taken, convicted, and loſt his Head, though he were the principall cauſe whereby *Henry* came to the Crown.

Peter in the mean time having got a tumultuous number of men, landed in *Kent*, where there were taken of his men 160, amongſt vvhom were five Captains, who firſt landed, they were hanged at *London*, and other places. *Peter*, when he little prevailed there, ſails into *Ireland*, where he vvas magnificently entertained by the Inhabitants, who much honoured the name of the *Plantagenets*. But when he could expect little help thence from a poore weak people, he makes haſte into *Scotland*. The *Scot* had him in high eſteem, and being deceived by his preſence or courtly Carriage, which *Margaret* had bred him to ſufficiently in her Palace, he gives him in Marriage, *Katharine* the Daughter of the Earl of *Huntley*, and ſent him toward the Borders of *England* with a great Army to do vvhat he could, in hopes to attaine ſome of the Subjects to him, either by feare or affection, but all proved in vain.

Henry being wonderfully offended by reaſon of the *Scots* invaſion, muſters an Army, and marches againſt the *Scots* under the Command of *Danby*, but he was called back again to ſuppreſs a Rebellion that roſe in *Cornwall* by reaſon of Tribute to be paid. The *Corniſh*, the Lord Lievtenant *Audley* being their Leader, march for *London*, but when they came thither, they were vanquiſhed and ſcatterered by the Royaliſts, two thouſand of them being ſlain, and many taken, the greateſt part of them were pardoned, except the Ring-leaders, for *Audley* was ignominiouſly drawn to execution, and loſt his head; and others that put the people forward, as *Thomas Flammok*, *Michael* Son to *Joſeph* a Blackſmith were hanged up.

The *Scot* takes occaſion hereby during theſe Tumults to go forward on his enterpriſe, and ſpoils the Frontiers of *England* again, and then beſieged the Caſtle of *Durham*, but the Earl of *Surrey*, collecting an Army of 20000 Men, and with a great Navy, not only raiſed the ſiege, but purſued the Enemies into *Scotland*, ruin'd many of their Forts and Caſtles, and when they would not ſtand to fight with him, he returned to *Barwick*.

By the Mediation of the King of *Spain* Truce was made between *England* and *Scotland* for ſome years, but on this condition that *Perkin Warbeck* muſt leave *Scotland*. He when he was gone from thence, hearing that new Tumults were up in *Cornwall*, came thither with a few Souldiers out of *Ireland*, whither he had tranſported himſelfe and his Family, and what by fair words, what by pretences, he drew ſome of

of the Inhabitants to his ſide, and ſo muſtering about three thouſand Souldiers, he beleaguer'd *Exceter*, but when he heard of the Kings March he forſook his Army, and fled to the Altar; The King in the mean time being now certain of his flight, cauſed diligent ſearch to be made for him, his Wife *Katharine* a very beautifull Woman, and of a moſt noble Family, was taken and delivered up to the King, who by reaſon of her Beauty and Deſcent, aſſigned to her a yearly Revenue. Then *Henry* puniſhed the Rebels, but he laid only a ſmall Penance on them, and ſo ſet them at liberty. *Peter* vvhen he had long ſtaid in Sanctuary, and found no place of ſafety, at laſt yeelded up himſelf voluntarily, and was ſent Priſoner to the Tower.

In the *interim*, *Sebaſtian Gabat*, a Citizen of *Genoa*, but born at *Briſtow*, procuring from *Henry* one or two Ships, ſailed to new Countreys in the Weſt, and after two years returned again into *England*. *Peter* who (we ſaid) was caſt into Priſon, made his eſcape ſhortly after, and went to *Richmond*, he was taken again, and made a publick ſhame, and once more impriſoned in the Tower, but when he began a new Conſpiracy with the Earl of *Warwick*, whoſe name *Lambert* had taken, and with ſome other familiar Friends of the Lievtenant of the Tower, he was drawn to Execution, and was hanged, together with two of the Lievtenants Servants. Alſo *Warwick* that he might give no more cauſe for new troubles, was beheaded after a ſhort time. This was the eldeſt Sonne of the Duke of *Clarence*, and the laſt male off-

ſpring of the Family of the *Plantagenets*, who was put in priſon from his very childhood, a thing beyond the knowledge and memory of man. Hence aroſe a new ſedition, and of the ſame kinde; For *Patrick* an *Auguſtin* Frier, counterfeiting a new Earl of *Warwick* of one of his Scholars, ſtirred up the people to Rebellion in his Pulpit, but he and his Scholar were taken. The young man was hanged, *Patrick* was caſt into perpetuall impriſonment, ſuch was the reverence they gave at that time to holy Orders, that they would never put to death any of them, though they were guilty of high Treaſon. Marriages were made about this time between *Katharine* the King of *Spains* Daughter, and *Arthur* Prince of *Wales*, and between *Henries* Daughter, and *James* King of *Scotland*. From this laſt Marriage, proceeded at length *Mary Stuart*, Mother to King *James*, who was Father to *Charles*, and the Kingdoms were united. *Arthur* five moneths after his Marriage died in *Wales*. But *Henry* that he might not be defrauded of the Dowry and Friendſhip of the King of *Spain*, married *Katharine* (by the Popes Indulgence) to *Henry* his ſecond Sonne, who was unwilling to it.

Edmund Pool Earl of *Suffolk*, Sonne to *Elizabeth* Siſter to *Edward* the fourth, being offended with the King at that time for ſome private injury, conſpired againſt him in *Flanders*; The matter being diſcovered, and the Conſpirators taken, he only eſcaped to *Philip* Arch-Duke of *Auſtria*. But *Philip* by the death of *Ferdinand* King of *Spain*, having got the Kingdom (in the name of his Wife *Joan*, who

who was the Kings Daughter, Sister to *Katharine*, which (as was said) was married to *Arthur* Prince of *Wales*) took his journey thither, and by a contrary Tempest was brought into *England*, King *Henry* went to meet him with all honour, and obtained from him the Earl of *Suffolk* upon the Condition that no violence should be offered to his Life. *Henry* cast him into Prison, and spared his Life, but after he lost his Head in the Raign of *Henry* the Eighth.

Henry being now in the height of glory, had procured his Subjects fidelity, and respect from his Neighbours. He was very happy, had he not about the end of his Raign and Life been so greedy after the goods and wealth of his Subjects.

He was long sick of the Gout, and afterwards he fell into an *Asthma* also, in the 52 year of his Life, and the 23 year of his Raign, he died in the year 1508. and lieth buried at *Westminster*.

HENRY *the Eighth, King of* England, France *and* Ireland,

Henricus VIII. D. G. Rex. Ang: Fran: et Hib:

Anno 1508.

HENRY the Eighth having got the Kingdom, at the beginning he behaved himself with great Obedience, Prudence and Justice. Marrying *Katharine* his Brothers Wife, which his Father had betrothed; He chose the wisest Counsellours, and he executed the cursed Ministers

ſters of his Fathers exaction. He ſpent then the firſt year of his Raign in Tilting and other Recreations. But at the requeſt of the King of *Spain* the Queens Father, an expedition was undertaken into *Spain* againſt the *Moors*, but before the *Engliſh* came, there was a Peace made with the *Moors*, and ſo it was but loſt labour and nothing being done, only the Captain receiving honours from the King, returned again for *England*.

Edward Poining a Knight was ſent with 1500 Bowmen to *Charles* Prince of *Spain* to aſſiſt him againſt the Duke of *Gelderland*, he ſucceeded proſperouſly, and loaded with rewards he came back again.

In the mean time a *Scotch* Pirate one *Burton*, who was wonderfull bold and valiant, did great miſchief about the Coaſts of *England*, the Admiral of the Sea was ſent out after him, after a doubtfull and a notable fight, he was conquered and ſlain, but his followers were pardoned; A great Example of the Kings Mercy.

In the mean time Warre grew between the *French* King and the Pope; *Henry* admoniſhed the *French* man to deſiſt, and when he could not prevail with him, he proclaimed Warre againſt him, and made a Confederacy with *Maximilian* the Emperour, and with *Ferdinand* King of *Spain*. The *Spaniard* had intreated *Henry* to ſend an Army into *Biſcay*, and joyning his Forces with his, that he ſhould make the *French* work from that part; Whereupon preſently *Thomas Gray* Marqueſs of *Dorſet* is ſent thither with other Nobility, and 10000 Souldiers,

diers, he, when he came thither, did not long wait for the *Spaniards* assistance; For the Duke of *Alba* took in the mean time by Force the Kingdom of *Navarre* from the *French*, endeavouring the profit of his own King. But the *English* that they might not seem to do nothing in *Guyan*, subduing some Towns that were not considerable, fell into that necessity of provision (the *Spaniard* affording them none) that many of them died miserably for hunger, contracting also diseases by such unusual diet, and the rest brake forth into open Rebellion. The Lord *Howard*, who had the disposing of all affairs, whilst the Marquess was sick, hardly escaped from being slain; Wherefore he was forced to provide Ships, and to bring these factious people home again.

Edward Howard Admiral at Sea, did wonderfully depopulate *Britanny* by fire and sword, and vanquished the Forces of the *Britans* in Battel, though they farre exceeded those he had, and so with his Ships laden with the spoil, he sailed towards the Isle of *Wight*, whilst *Henry* at *London* recreated himself with Tilting and other courtly delights.

In the mean time in *France* in the *Brittish* Sea, there was almost an equal fight for loss between the *English* and the *French* Ships, and the Victory was doubtfull. After this the *English* set upon the *French* Ships very indiscreetly in the very Haven, with a great losse to themselves and their Admiral, whereby they were forced to sou. a retreat and be gone. Whereupon the *French* began to wax more insolent, to do mischief on the Coasts of *England*, and to burn some

ſome Cities, untill by the vigilancy of *Howard*, who was put into the others place, they were kept in.

Henry was reſolved to make a Warre indeed with *France*, and ſent *George Talbot* before with the principal Nobility, and 8000 Souldiers only to *Callis*, then he ſent *Charles Sommerſet*, and other Lords with 6000 Souldiers, he himſelf being to come after them. When the Admirals met, they fell upon *Tarvenne* with joynt Forces. *Henry* ſhortly after came to them with 9000 Souldiers, and with a great number of Pioneers. Alſo *Maximilian* the Emperour, which was a rare example, took Pay under King *Henry*. Yet though he ſerved under the *Engliſh*, he was received as an Emperour ſhould be, and for the honour of his Majeſty. Then the *French* Horſe purpoſing to relieve the City with proviſion, were repulſed by the *Engliſh*, the Duke of *Longovil* being taken, and 240 more, whereupon a wonderfull fear and deſpair fell upon the Townſmen; ſo the *Engliſh* preſſing them ſore, they were forced to ſurrender. The Souldiers had leave to depart with their Arms, the Wals were laid level with the ground, the City, excepting the chief Church, and the Palace, were conſumed with fire. Then he marched to *Tourney*, and beleaguer'd the City, they refuſing to yeeld, he quickly became Maſter of it, cauſing the Citizens to take an Oath of fidelity. And when he provoked the *French* to fight, and could not make them accept of it, becauſe the Winter was now hard by, he made *Poyning* Governour of it, and returned himſelf for *England*.

In

In the mean while the *Scotch* at the inſtigation of the *French* fell upon the *Engliſh* Frontiers. Their General was the Lord *Humes*, who with ſeven or eight thouſand men waſted the Borders. But *Edward Bulmir* ſuddenly came upon him, and took all the booty from him, he himſelf hardly eſcaped, ſix hundred of his men being ſlain, and four hundred taken. But *James* with an Army of ſixty thouſand men, entred the skirts of *England*, who was met by the Earl of *Surrey*, *Henry* his Deputy in thoſe parts, at *Bramſton* with ſix and twenty thouſand men, and joyning Battell, the *Engliſh* wan the day by their great valour, and the *Scots* loſt it by their great confidence. *James* himſelf with two Earls, three Biſhops, and eight thouſand Souldiers were ſlain, no fewer were taken; nor was this Victory wan by the *Engliſh* without loſſe of blood, it was fought in the year 1513.

Henry coming out of *France*, made the Earl of *Surrey*, becauſe he had ſo well managed his buſineſs Duke of *Norfolk*, and other Lords who had done good ſervice, received Honours as they deſerved. He gave alſo to *Thomas Wolſey* the Biſhoprick of *Lincoln*. This man to be often named by us, came from a poor parentage to great Honour, and at laſt was made a Cardinal, and governed the Common-wealth of *England* very wiſely.

Pope *Julius* the ſecond, at this time gave to *Henry* great Honour, ſending unto him a Cap of Maintenance, a Sword, and the Title *Of the moſt Chriſtian King*, which Grace *Henry* received with Tiltings, and other pompous Shews,

wherein

wherein he himſelf did alwayes bear the principal part.

In the interim *Mary* the Kings Siſter was eſpouſed to the Prince of *Spain*, but becauſe the Embaſſadours of *Spain* made delayes, ſhe was betrothed to the *French*, deſiring it, and having had their fill of Warre. But before the matter was publiſhed, *John* the Admiral of the *French* firſt ruined one Village in *England*, and *John Wallop* in revenge of this injury burnt one and twenty in *France*; But at laſt a League was made, and they ceaſed from Warre. The *French man* lived not above three moneths after his Marriage, and the laſcivious old man being dead, *Mary* (by *Henries* conſent) was married to the Duke of *Suffolk*. *Wolſey* about this time was honoured with a Cardinals Cap, and is created by the King Chancellour of *England*. And Cardinal *Campeius* was ſent to *Henry* to deſire aſſiſtance to make Warre againſt the *Turk*, but he loſt his labour, for that cheat of raiſing money was grown ſtale. But *Matthias* the Cardinal being ſent by the Emperour *Maximilian* for the ſame purpoſe, prevailed at the requeſt of *Wolſey*.

At that time *Henry* was in great danger of his life. For as he went a Hawking, the Pole broke that he leaped over the Ditches withall, and he was almoſt ſmothered in mire and dirt, but his Lackey drew him out in time, and ſaved his life. In the mean while a Sedition grew at *London* between the Citizens and ſtrangers, not without blood-ſhed, which was qualified by the death of the Ring-leaders, and pardon to the reſt.

Tourney

Tourney at this time, upon Conditions, and under colour of Matrimony between the *Dolphin* and *Mary* King *Henries* Daughter, is delivered up to the *French*, and Hoſtages being given, a League is confirmed between them. *Maximilian* being dead, the Empire deſcended to *Charles* King of *Caſtile* the fifth of that Name.

Henry in the mean while was idle for lack of Warre, ſpending his time in Tiltings, Dancings, Pleaſures, and other Courtly Delights. Then that Peace might not be without its Glory, a ſolemn Meeting was appointed between the two Kings of *England* and *France*. For that purpoſe a magnificent Palace of Wood was built in *France*. At laſt they meet in wonderfull ſtate, they applied themſelves to Turnaments, running at the Ring, and other ſuch Recreations, and an Agreement was renewed between the Emperour, and the Kings of *England* and *France*.

Woolſey in the *interim* did vvhat he pleaſed, he found no hinderance in his attempts whatſoever. He charged the Duke of *Buckingham* of high Treaſon, whether it were ſo, or out of envy is uncertain, but the Duke loſt his Head for it.

A new cauſe is given for a Warre between the Emperour and the King of *France*, wherefore *Woolſey* is ſent Umpire between both, who did not behave himſelfe ſo prudently as loftily, whereby he incurred the *French* Kings diſpleaſure. *Hugh* of *Moncada* beſieged *Tourney*, and though the *French* did his beſt to relieve it, yet he became Maſter of it.

Henry

Henry in the mean while, becauſe he had written a Book againſt *Luther*, had the Title given him, to be *Defender of the Faith*, which hath paſſed to all his ſucceſſours.

At that time cauſe was given of a Warre between the *French* and the *Scotch* King, by occaſion of the Duke of *Albany*, and by reaſon the *French* had not paid the money which he promiſed to *Mary Henries* Siſter, ſo the Covenant being broken, they fell to Warre, *William* the ſonne of *William* a Knight, the Admiral-Lievtenant, with eight and twenty Ships, ſpoiled the Coaſts of *Scotland*, burnt their Shipping, and ſo returned home.

Charles the Emperour in the mean time came to *London*, where he was received in great ſtate and honour, and with a ſolemn Ceremony was graced with the Order of the Garter. Then under pretence of conducting the Emperour into *Spain* by ſhipping, the Earl of *Surrey* the Kings Admiral ſets upon *Brittany*, and conquers *Morlays*, who alſo was again ſent into *France* with a great Army, and he ruined many Towns and Caſtles, and conſumed them by fire, but he attempted the Fort *Heding* in vain, having left his great Guns at home, and ſo could make no battery; but having behaved himſelf honourably, he retreated to *Callis*. Alſo the Marqueſſe of *Dorſet* deſtroyed by fire and Sword an innumerable company of Villages and Forts in *Scotland*, but could not come to joyn Battell with them. *Sands* ſallied out of *Callis*, and skirmiſhing with the Enemy, after he had burned many of their Caſtles, he came back to the City.

When therefore King *Henry* understood, that the Duke of *Albany*, who commanded all *Scotland*, had a choice Army in *France*, he sent *William* Sonne to *William* with a Navy, that he should set upon him in his coming back again, but when he had scouted up and down at Sea in vain, he at last set his men on Land, and with a handfull of his, he overthrew a great Army of the *French*, and obtained thereby both the Victory and the prey, and burning the Suburbs of *Tripport*, he returned for *England*.

Henry now thinks seriously again of a Warre with *France*, and sends *Suffolk*, and many principall Nobility with a great Army into *France*, who at first assault overcame *Bell-Castle*, and made *William Scevington* the Governour of the Garrison. In the mean time the Duke of *Burbon*, Constable of *France*, revolted to the *English* King, with ten thousand *French*, who being strengthened by these new Forces, enter upon *Picardy*, and conquers many Towns and Castles; but Winter coming on, and scarcity of provision, and the Souldiers murmuring, not waiting for the supply that *Henry* sent, he was necessitated to retreat to *Callis*, yet he had done a great mischief to the Enemy.

The *Scotch* in the mean while supposing the *English* to be over-busied with the *French* Warres, lift up their Heads again, and assaulting the Borders of *England*, they winne divers Towns.

But the Earl of *Surrey* entring into *Scotland* with six thousand Souldiers, wan divers Forts, and joyning a little Battell with the *Scotch*, he returned Conquerour, not without great losse

to

to the enemy, beſides the Caſtle of *Judworth*, and the Town that he burnt up.

So with uncertain Fortune the buſineſs being acted in thoſe parts, there was a concluſion for a Ceſſation of Armes, that ſo they might have time to treat of Peace.

Francis the firſt, King of *France* at that time was conquered by the Emperour *Charles* the fifth at *Papion*, and was taken Priſoner, which was no ſmall happineſſe for the *Engliſh* affairs, but a ſad loſs for the *French*. Then Peace was ratified between the Emperour and the *French*, and the *Engliſh* agreed with them alſo. But the Emperour and the *French* ſhortly fell to a new Warre.

Peace being confirmed abroad, *England* began to be in an uproar with greater Troubles in Civil Diſſentions; For *Henry* who had lived twenty years peaceably with his Wife *Katharine*, had a ſcruple of Conſcience put upon him, whether he could without inceſt live with his brothers Wife? (for as we ſaid, ſhe was firſt married to his brother *Arthur*) Judges were choſen to end this Queſtion. But Cardinall *Wolſey*, who had not prudently dealt for *Henry*, had all his Authority taken from him, and his Eſtate was Confiſcate. But at laſt other new Dignities being granted to him, his great loſs was ſomewhat repaired. Then a Parliament was called, and he was charged with many faults, and amongſt the reſt, that he was wont to write in his Letters, *I and my King*, and had cauſed the Cardinals Hat to be ſtamped on the Kings Coyn. He was convicted of all theſe things, and deprived of all his Eſtate; which

ſhew a wonderfull example of the inconſtancy of all humane affairs, for he that but lately ruled all and the King too, as he pleaſed, made Laws, and ſwaied Courts of Juſtice, rooted out the Nobles at his pleaſure, burdned the Subjects with great Taxes, deprived both Clergy and Laity of their goods, he is now caſt down from his high Pinnacle of Honour, hated by all, and made no way like himſelf. Afterwards when he was ſent for to the Court to anſwer his charge, he died of grief by the way. In the mean time the buſineſs for a Divorce was tranſmitted to *Clement* the Pope of *Rome*, at the ſuit of the Queen *Katharine*. But the Pope fearing to diſpleaſe King *Henry*, who had lately the Title of *Defender of the Faith* given him by *Leo* the tenth, nor did he think it ſafe to provoke the Emperour who ruled in *Italy*, ſpun out the buſineſs with delays by his Legate *Campeius*; who at length with a great diſguſt to the *Engliſh*, after many haſtings and procraſtinations, departed from *England*, leaving the buſineſs uneffected. The King in the interim burning with new flames of love, and ſo admitting no delay, *Warham* being dead, created *Thomas Cranmer* Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, who ſtood for a Divorce of Queen *Katharine*. The Pope in the mean time gave his Judgement for *Katharine*. But *Henry*, who had now Divorced *Katharine* (by the Authority of many Divines, and of thoſe at *Paris*, who were it is ſuppoſed corrupted by money) married *Anne* of *Boloyne* privately, and being thereupon angry with the Pope, he aboliſhed all his Power over the *Engliſh* Church, making

it

it high Treaſon for any man, to preferre the Popes Authority before the Kings, or ſhould pay Tribute to him, which he had no right unto, and cauſed them to be denied unto him for the future, and made it a penalty for their life, if any man ſhould maintain the Pope to be the ſupream Head. Then he made all the Churches of *England* and *Ireland* take an Oath to him, that they ſhould acknowledge him to be Head of the Church next under Chriſt. The Diſcipline was thus changed, but nothing in the Doctrine, which he confirmed by a Synod called at *London*. For he put to death many of thoſe that followed *Luther* and *Swinglius*. So *Henry* behaved himſelfe in the reſt of his life, that had the Popes not been unjuſt againſt him, he would willingly have ſubmitted himſelf under their power. The Pope being offended that he had loſt his Authority, ſending out his Writings or Bull as they called it, he Excommunicated *Henry* King of *England*, but when it was known that it was procured by Queen *Katharine*, it was the leſſe regarded, and ſhe ſhortly after being deprived of friends, loſt her life for her contumacy. In the mean time Sir *Thomas More*, once Chancellour of *England*, and *John Fiſher* Biſhop of *Rocheſter*, who both refuſed to take the Oath of the Kings Supremacy, loſt their Heads. *Henry* now uſing his own Authority, invaded the goods of the Church, and expelled the Monks out of their Monaſteries: Nor was he content with that, but he cut off the Heads of his ſecond Wife *Anne* of *Boloyne*, Daughter to *Thomas Boloyne* Earl of *Wiltſhire*, accuſing her for Inceſt and Adul-

terly, together with the Lord *Rochford* her Brother, and others that were of the Kings Bed-Chamber.

Then he married *Jane Seymor*, who died afterwards in Childe-birth of *Edward* the sixth of that name, who succeeded King. Then he Divorced from him *Anne* of *Cleve*, newly married, and for her sake he beheaded *Thomas Cromwell*, who made the match, who was risen from a mean estate to a vast power by the success of Fortune. Also *Thomas Howard* Duke of *Norfolk* had his Head chopt off, being charged of Treason, because he had privily married *Margaret* Daughter to the King of *Scots*, and *Henryes* Neece. *Margaret* was first detained, then she was set free, after that she was married to *Matthew* Earl of *Leven*, King *James* his Grandfather. In the mean time seditions arose in the North parts of *England*, here and there by reason of the change made of Church Ceremonies; some were punished for it; some were sent home, and some were subdued by force of Armes; the troubles were happily asswaged, yet not without some danger: for it was a matter of great concernment to keep all quiet under new customs.

Henry now married his fifth Wife *Katharine Howard*, but her he beheaded shortly after, with the Lord of *Rochford*, condemning her for Lasciviousnesse.

At that time *Henry* had the Title of King of *Ireland*, when as before he was called only Lord of it. In the interim *Arthur Plantagenet*, ballard to *Edward* the fourth, is accused of

Treason,

Treaſon, but when he was proved not guilty, he was received into the Kings favour, but *Arthur* took ſo much joy at it, that he died the next night of meer rejoycing.

The *Scotch* now entring the Frontiers of *England*, and ſpoiling them, compell *Henry* to take Arms, who ſent the Duke of *Norfolk* with an Army into *Scotland*, who ruined many Villages and Houſes, and not ſeeing any enemy, he returned to *Barwick*. The *Scot* would not ſuffer this violence to be unrevenged, but muſters an Army ſuddenly, and falls into *England*, but his men being ſcattered and killed, the *Scot* fell into ſuch grief of minde, and then into a Feaver, that he quickly died of it, leaving *Mary Stewart* his Daughter but eight dayes old, Heir of the Kingdom. *Henry* to put an end to ſo great diſſentions, by the union of theſe two Nations, dealt with the captive Lords to Eſpouſe this Inheritrix of *Scotland* to his Son *Edward*, who were ſet at liberty to preſs the buſineſs.

But by the mediation of the Cardinal of S^t^. *Andrews*, this Treaty was made void, the Daughter being married to the Dolphin. *Henry* was enraged at this, and ſent a valiant Army into *Scotland*, and burnt *Leeth*, which pacified his wrath. Then he made Peace with *Charles* the fifth, the Emperour, and he married his ſixth Wife *Katharine*, *Latimers* Widow, vvho was brought in danger of her life upon ſuſpition of the change of her Religion, but by her prudence and humility ſhe eſcaped. Now *Henry* by his Covenant with the Emperour proclaims Warre againſt the *French* King, and

ſent an Army unto *Calis*, under the command of *John Wallop*, which joyning with the Forces of *Charles*, beſieged the City *Landreice*. But the *French* making ſhew of a Battell, called the Emperour off from the Siege, and when he had brought proviſion into the City, he retreated, having deluded *Charles*. Then *Henry* muſtering a mighty Force ſails himſelf into *France*, and beſieging *Bononia*, won the place.

In the mean time the *Engliſh* Ships vvhich they had taken from the *French*, are filled with proviſion at *London*: but the *Engliſh* had bad ſucceſs in their fight in *Scotland*, and *Henries* men were vanquiſhed, by which Victory, and new Forces they had recruited themſelves with from *France*, the *Scots* grew inſolent and invade *England*: But the *Engliſh* by the good ſucceſs of the Earl of *Hereford*, deſtroyed an innumerable company of Villages in *Scotland*, and returned home Conquerours, though otherwiſe they ſuſtained a mighty loſs by the *Scots*.

The Admirall of *England* with a Fleet did miſchief on the Coaſts of *Normandy*, and deſtroyed a multitude of the enemy; but ſhortly after there was a Treaty made between the *French* and the *Engliſh*, and the conditions of agreement were, that the *French* ſhould redeem *Bononia* vvith eight hundred thouſand Crowns.

In the mean time *Thomas* Duke of *Norfolk*, and *Henry* Earl of *Surrey*, his Sonne, are accuſed of Treaſon, becauſe they had engraven ſomething in their Coats of Arms that ſeemed

to

to be peculiar to the King, and though they did defend their Titles very abundantly, yet the Earl loſt his head. But the Duke was kept in priſon till the Reign of Queen *Mary*. *Henry* died about this time, in the year 1547, when he had reigned 38 years, and was 56 years old, and buried at *Windſor*. He was a Prince adorned with all gifts of Nature, and in whom, had he not too much loved his pleaſure, there was no defect. He was a great favourer of Learning.

Edwardus. VI. D. G. Rex. Ang: Fran: et Hib:

Anno 1547.

HENRY dying, left his Sonne *Edward*, born of *Seymer*, by his Will to succeed him in the first place, and next to him *Mary*, *Katharines* Daughter, and last of all *Elizabeth*, which he begat of *Anne* of *Boloyn*. Young *Edward* was Crowned at nine years of age, in the year

year 1547. Becauſe he was young he had ſixteen Overſeers appointed for him, the chief was the Duke of *Sommerſet*, Brother to *Jane Seymour*, a man of a great integrity. The death of *Henry* being heard of by *Francis* King of *France*, did exceedingly grieve the old man, who being about the ſame age, did preſage his own death to be near. He kept a Funerall ſolemnity for him, as the manner is for Kings, and not long after that he followed him that was gone before him.

Henry at his death, had commanded his Councill before all things, that they ſhould preſs a Marriage for his Sonne *Edward* with the Queen of *Scotland*. Meſſengers are therefore ſent to treat of conditions, and to obtain their conſent; but when the faction of the Papiſts prevailed for the Dolphin, a great Army was preſently raiſed, and ſent into *Scotland*, under the conduct of the Viceroy *Sommerſet*. The *Scots* alſo came to meet him with a powerfull hand, they joyned Battell at *Muskelburgh*, but they were beaten down and put to flight, the chief of their Nobility being ſlain or taken priſoners. After this Victory many Cities yeilded, and the Nobles fell off from them in greater numbers: But that there might be an end made of this Warre and difference, they ſend the maiden Queen by advice of the Peers, to be Educated and Eſpouſed in *France*. In the mean time there was a great change of the old cuſtoms in the Churches of *England*. Images were caſt out of the Churches, by the Authority of *Sommerſet*, who was addicted to the Reformed Religion; The Sacrament was exhibi-

ted

ted under both kindes, and the other old Ceremonies were abolished, all that made opposition were either cast into prison, or lost their places. Upon this ground a wonderfull sedition arose in divers Countries of *England*, though the Rebels had several intentions, some came to pillage, others under pretence of Religion set forward other designes; the smalleſt number made it any matter of conscience. There was a Proclamation made whereby all were pardoned if they would lay down their Arms; but the more mildly they were dealt withall, the more did this mad rabble increase. They besieged *Exceter*, but the Citizens did resist them with wonderfull Valour, enduring great famine and scarcity. At length *Gray* coming with an Army, after some small Bickerings, raised the siege. The Rebels recollecting their Forces, began a new fight, but they were put to flight, or taken presently and hanged. When this sedition was quelled, another as great rose in *Norfolk*; for *Robert Ket* a base fellow, had drawn twenty thousand men to his party, who guarded him that he might deliver up some complaints to the King. The King, though he disdained to treat with Rebels, answered them that their Petitions should be granted at the next Parliament. They were not content with this, but they laid siege to the City of *Norwich*, and wan it. The Earl of *Northampton* went against them with a small Army, and was worsted by the factious rabble, and the Lord *Sheffield* and others were killed. But being strengthned with new Forces, he went once more against them, and holding forth to them

the

the Kings pardon, they threw away their Arms, and left their Colours, returning every man to his place. *Ket* and the reſt of the Ring-leaders ſuffered for it. Another tumult roſe about the ſame time, which fell of it ſelf, only the Ring-leaders were executed.

The *French* in the mean while breaking their League, proclaimed Warre with *England*; and providing a Fleet vvhen they had aſſaulted *Garnſey*, *Jerſey*, and *Bononia* in vain with an Army, they left off of their own accord. In the mean time the Viceroy of *England* being deceived, beheaded the Admirall his Brother, being circumvented by the feminine fraud of his Wife, and condemned him for nothing that was laid to his charge; upon which occaſion both he and his Authority committed an egregious fault. For they that favoured the Admirall were offended with the Viceroy, and they that did honour him, would truſt him but a little, ſo they all fell from him at once, though upon divers ends. Alſo the Viceroy was taken up with building a ſtately Palace, (which is to this day called *Sommerſet* Houſe.) And he had demoliſhed divers Temples, Towers, and ſacred places, by which injury he had alienated from him not a little the mindes of all men. *Warwick* vvho was of his own inclination the Viceroy his greateſt enemy, made uſe of this occaſion, and procured ſome Lords to ſtand with him, and they conſpired together againſt the Viceroy, and ſending Meſſengees to the King, who ſojourned at *Windſor*, to certifie him of the good intention of the Lords, they deſired his conſent to caſt the Viceroy into Priſon.

ſon. But the Viceroy, when he would not or could not anſwer the crimes objected againſt him, he ſubmitted himſelf to the Kings will and pleaſure, by which humility he obtained pardon, and was received into grace. Alſo the Dukes Daughter (to make the friendſhip laſting by Marriage) was betrothed to *Warwicks* Sonne, and *Warwick* was made Admirall of the Sea.

Then Peace being ratified between the *Engliſh* and the *French*, *Bononia* was delivered up to the *French* King, 400000 Crowns being paid to the *Engliſh*.

The Emperour in the mean time, becauſe the profeſſion of the *Romiſh* Religion was not allowed to his Siſter, denounced Warre againſt *England*, but he was pacified by ſuch an Anſwer as was ſeaſonable to that time.

Alſo there was a Treaty for a Marriage between *Elizabeth* the Kings Siſter, and the King of *Denmarks* Sonne, but *Elizabeth* could not be perſwaded to be married to any man.

A ſpeech there was further concerning a Marriage between *Edward* and the *French* Kings Daughter, which was ratified, and the Dowry agreed upon.

In the mean time the Earl of *Northumberland*, that he might bring to paſſe what he intended, endeavours by all means to root out the Duke of *Sommerſet*. But he to prevent his ſnares, came one day into his Chamber armed, and found him naked in his Bed, and whether he were pacified by his falſe or friendly ſhew of Love and Humanity, he ſpared him, and departed doing nothing to him. But afterwards

Sommer-

Sommerſet vvas accuſed by him for high Treaſon, and loſt his head for it, being a forerunner of the Accuſers deſtiny. *Northumberland*, when as thus farre all things had ſucceeded as he deſired, was reſolved to follow the ſucceſſe, and perſwaded the King at length, that if he would have the Reformed Religion, that was then generally received in *England*, to be confirmed, he ſhould paſs over his Siſter *Mary*, who was ſo ſtrongly addicted to the Church of *Rome*, and ſhould nominate *Joan Gray* to be his ſucceſſour, Wife to his Son *Gilford Dudley*, who was next of blood after his Siſters. The King vvho was reſolved by all means to preſerve the Reformed Religion, eaſily yeilded to this, ſome others in vain oppoſing it. The King died ſhortly of a Conſumption, having Raigned ſix years and five moneths, and buried at *Weſtminſter*; by whoſe death the Duke of *Northumberland* being now made partaker of his deſire, took to himſelf the rule of the Kingdom, and commanded his Daughter *Joan* to be publickly proclaimed Queen by King *Edwards* Teſtament.

MARY

Maria D.G. Regina Ang: Fran: et Hib:

Anno 1553.

MARY, so soon as the fame was spread of her Brothers death, came with Post-horse from *Hovesdon*, where she then resided, into *Suffolk*, to whom presently came divers Lords, who had first compacted to preserve the Reformed Religion. Then she sent by her Letters

Letters to the Senate of *London*; that they ſhould proclaim her for Queen. But the Lords in the Name of all the people made anſwer, that by the Teſtament of King *Edward*, *Joan* was to ſucceed, and they aſſerted that *Maries* Mother was divorced; whereupon they fly to Arms. The Earl of *Northumberland* with a ſmall Army went againſt *Mary*, but as he proceeded but ſlowly, *Maries* Forces increaſed mightily: Alſo *Edward Haſtings*, who was ſet with four thouſand Souldiers and ſix Ships, to prevent that *Mary* might no wayes eſcape, revolted to her, by which loſs the *Londoners* and Lords were not a little diſmaid, and grew at odds one with another. The *London* Counſell, when they did not hold faſt together, was commanded openly to proclaim *Mary* Queen, and the ſame was done in all other places. *Northumberland* when he was certain that his companions had fallen from him, that he might not runne the hazzard alone, called a Counſell at *Cambridge*, and he for want of a Herauld proclaimed *Mary* Queen of *England*, caſting his Cap up in token of joy. But that did not at all help his cauſe; for the Earl of *Arundel*, who a little before did not decline to venture his life for *Joan*, coming to *Cambridge*, in *Maries* Name takes the Duke, who in vain intreated for his life, and caſts him into priſon. *Joan* at the command of her Father Duke of *Suffolk*, when the caſe was altered, laid down the Enſignes of the Kingdome with more cheerfulneſſe than ſhe had taken them up.

The Queen coming to *London*, met her Siſter *Elizabeth* with a thouſand Horſe, and *Tho-*

mas of *Norfolk*, *Edward Contener*, *Stephen Gardner* Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, and *Sommerſets* Wife, which ſhe received into grace, giving them her hand to kiſſe. Then entring upon the Church affairs, ſhe aboliſhed thoſe Biſhops and Ceremonies that *Edward* had confirmed, ſetting up others in their room (the people were not a little enraged at it) and then ſhe puniſhed ſeverely all thoſe that were enemies to the Church of *Rome*.

In the interim the Duke of *Northumberland*, the Earls of *Northampton* and *Warwick*, are Endited of high Treaſon, ſhe ſpared *Northampton*, but *Northumberland* was beheaded, abjuring the Religion he profeſſed before in hope of pardon. His Body was buried by the Duke of *Summerſet* his Capitall enemy, between *Anne* of *Boloyne*, and *Katharine*, who all ſuffered the ſame death. The reſt perſiſted and did not renounce the Faith they had profeſſed.

Joan afterwards with her husband *Dudley*, *Ambroſe* and *Henry*, ſonnes to *Northumberland*, was condemned to loſe her Head, but ſhe was reprieved for a time.

Then the Marriage was contracted between the Queen, and *Philip* Sonne to *Charles* the fifth, who was afterwards King of *Spain*, which matter was very ill liked by ſome, who did foreſee from hence a dangerous conſequence to the Kingdome of *England*: Amongſt whom was *Thomas Wiat*, who took up Arms to rebell by the advice of *Suffolke*, Father to *Joan Grey*, drawing ſome of the Nobility to ſide with him. Alſo *Bret* who was ſent againſt him with five thou-

thouſand men, revolted to him, by which ſucceſs he grew more bold, and marched toward *London*, and put the Citizens into great fear, ſo that the Lawyers pleaded in their Armour.

In the mean while the Earl of *Suffolk* had an Army raiſed in the County of *Warwick*, but the Earl of *Huntington* was ſent out againſt him, who terrified the feeble Duke, that he was forced to flie in haſte, and to ſhelter himſelf in Woods and by places. At laſt he was diſcovered by his Hoſt, and ſent with a ſtrong guard to *London*, and caſt into priſon. *Wiat* in the mean time coming to *London*, vvas ſhut out of the City, but he paſſed over the *Thames* at *Kingſton*, and provided to offer violence to the Citizens. After ſome light skirmiſhing with the Queens Forces, he was overborn by the power of his Enemy, and when he had yeilded, he was ſent to priſon, his Souldiers being ſcattered or taken. The Queen being enraged with that boldneſſe of the Subjects, began ſeriouſly to conſider how to puniſh the guilty; *Gilford* Husband to *Joan* was firſt beheaded, then *Joan* her ſelf, within the Walls of the Tower of *London*, vvith a wonderfull Courage, Piety and Conſtancy, had her Head chopt off. She was a Princeſſe for her Learning and Wiſdome, worthy of immortal praiſe. It is reported alſo that *Morgan*, who had given ſentence of death againſt *Joan*, fell into madneſſe ſhortly after her Death, and died mad, alwayes crying out, *That they ſhould take* Joan Grey *away from him.* Then

Suffolk was beheaded, and the ſame day *Wiat*, the cauſe of all theſe miſchiefs (for *Joan* had been pardoned, had not he with a furious Tumult enraged the Queen.) Thoſe that followed him, ſome were puniſhed in other places, and at ſeverall times, amongſt vvhom was *Thomas Grey*, and ſome were pardoned. Alſo *Elizabeth* vvas caſt into Priſon by the malice of *Gardner* Biſhop of *Wincheſter*. Without doubt her Life was at ſtake, had ſhe not wiſely anſwered Queſtions propounded to her concerning her Faith; They did ſeverely at that time puniſh all thoſe that were Enemies to the Religion of the Church of *Rome*, amongſt whom vvas *Cranmer* Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, *Nicholas Ridley* Biſhop of *London*, and *Hugh Latimer* Biſhop of *Worceſter*, theſe refuſing to abjure their Faith, were burnt to aſhes.

The Queens Marriage with *Philip* was now ſolemnized, and Cardinal *Pool* being ſent from the Pope, all the Errours of the *Engliſh* are purged, as it were, and all confeſſing their ſinnes are received under the Popes Tuition.

The fame was at this time, that the Queen was with Childe, ſhe was ſo glad of it, that ſhe commanded to let looſe many who were priſoners in the Tower; Amongſt which were the ſons of the Duke of *Northumberland*, who were before condemned to loſe their Heads. But all this hope vaniſhed, when the Queens Conception proved to be but a Tmpany.

That there might not lack Examples of Piety, the

the Queen reſtored to the Church all the Goods ſhe poſſeſſed belonging to the Church, and when ſhe was told, That by ſo great bounty the Crown-Lands would be much waſted: She anſwered piouſly and prudently, That ſhe preferred her ſouls health before all the worlds good.

Philip in the *interim* went to *Bruſſels* to his Father *Charles*, and obtain'd from him the Kingdom of *Spain*, and his other Dominions before his Death, then he returned for *England*; Then again he went to *Callis*, to wage Warre with the *Frenchman*, and he ſtaid upon that buſineſs above eighteen Moneths, the *Engliſh* murmuring, and the Queen lamenting for his abſence.

Thomas Stafford at that time was inſtigated by the *French* to make Warre againſt the Queen, and landing in *England* with an Army, he wan the Caſtle of *York*, but he was ſoon conquer'd, and taken by the Earl of *Weſtmerland*, he was then beheaded at *London*, and his followers were hanged.

The Queen, though it were againſt the Articles agreed upon, put her finger in to aſſiſt her Husband, and ſent an Army, under the Command of *Pembroke*, to aſſiſt him to beleaguer St. *Quintins*. The *French* attempting to relieve the place with victuals, were forced to fight, and they were beaten, and the chief of their Nobility were taken, amongſt whom were the Dukes *Momorancy*, *Mompenſier* and *Longovill*, *John Borbon* Duke of *Anion* was killed, whereupon the City yeelded. This Victory was imputed chiefly to the *Engliſh*, but

it was recompenſed with a greater loſs, for *Calis* having more Forces drawn out of it, then could be ſpared, was aſſaulted by the Duke of *Guiſe*, vvho would not let ſuch an opportunity ſlip, and being repulſed, he came valiantly on again, ſo long, untill it was forced to yeeld, after this City had been in the hands of the *Engliſh* two hundred years; *Guyna* followed this, though it were gallantly maintain'd by the beſieged, and ſo the *Engliſh* were thruſt forth of all *France*. The Queen was vvonderfull grieved for the loſs of *Callis*, ſhe ſent a great Fleet, and burnt ſome Villages, but had ſmall comfort for her great loſs. Peace then was confirmed between both Crowns, but *Mary* ſought not for it, who took ſuch griefe of mind for the loſs of *Callis*, and was ſo weak of body by reaſon of her Dropſie, that ſhe ended her dayes, in the year of our Lord, 1558. the fifth year of her Raign, and the three and fortieth year of her Life.

ELIZABETH, *Queen of* England France *and* Ireland.

Elizabetha D. G. Regina Ang: Fran: et Hib:

Anno 1598.

ELIZABETH Daughter to *Henry* the eighth by *Anne* of *Bullen*, succeeded her Sister *Mary*, being raised to the Throne from the Prison; By her Coronation the Papal Authority fell again the second time. All the Ceremonies *Mary* had brought in, she abolished,

and reformed all according to the Rule of her Brother *Edward*.

Being ſhe was of a flouriſhing age, and had a moſt flouriſhing Kingdome, it could not be but ſhe ſhould be ſought unto by many Lovers, that were at emulation for her. For at once *Maximilian* the Emperour, the Kings of *Spain* and *Sweden*, the Arch-Duke of *Auſtria*, and the Duke of *Angiers*, ſent to wooe her, but they were all put by; Firſt, becauſe the Queen would not marry, for at her Inauguration, the Condition was, That ſhe ſhould marry no ſtranger; whereby there was hopes left to the Natives for ſo great a Match.

The *French* and *Scotch* they hoped to prevail much by reaſon of her tender years, being alſo ſhe was a woman, whereupon they invade and ſpoil the *Engliſh* Frontiers, for *Mary Stuart* Daughter of *James* the fifth, had married to *Francis* the ſecond, King of *France*, and the *French* King pleaded his Right thereupon to the Crown of *England*, becauſe his Wife was allied to *Henry* the ſeventh, and *Elizabeth* was born by a ſecond venter; *Henry* the eighth his firſt Wife being alive, and ſo was accounted as a baſtard by her Enemies. But *Elizabeth* to win the Love of her Neighbours, lent help to the Subjects of *Scotland*, who by the malice of the *Guiſians* were extreamly afflicted, and the buſineſs was drawn to this head, that Peace was ratified between *Elizabeth*, the *Scotch*, and the *French*, and all the *Roman* Catholicks that neſted in *Scotland* were commanded to be gone, and the *Engliſh* Colours that the *Frenchman* had taken up wrongfully, were wreſted from him.

Mary

Mary when *Francis* was dead, returned for *Scotland*, and made a firm Agreement with *Elizabeth*, untill ſuch time as Envy and Ambition growing up, the Agreement was violated by the ruine of one of them, and their Siſter-like Concord was diſſolved. For *Mary* her ſecond Husband ſhe was married to, was *Henry Darley*, Kinſman to the *Stuarts*, and one that was the moſt beautifull amongſt Princes, who being afterwards ſlain, as 'tis ſuppoſed, by Feminine fraud, ſhe fell into the hatred of all her Subjects, and when after that in ſpite of the Nobility ſhe made *Bothwell* partaker of her bed, and for his cauſe made Warre upon her Subjects, ſhe fell into all miſery, and being captivated, ſhe was kept ſo long time, but at length ſhe made her eſcape, and fled into *England* to *Elizabeth*, who received this miſerable woman in her Arms. She was at firſt liberally entertained, but after, when ſhe began to move Diſſention in *England*, where ſhe was entertained, being a moſt bitter enemy to thoſe of the Reformed Religion, ſhe was kept more narrowly. For eighteen years ſhe was held in priſon, ſometimes with more, ſometimes leſs liberty, untill ſuch time as ſhe grew fierce by reaſon of her Captivity, and to riot in hopes of the Kingdom, laying ſnares for the Queens Life, for that cauſe, at the requeſt of the ſeverall Orders of *England*, ſhe was beheaded. Alſo the Duke of *Suffolk*, who had ſecretly gone about to obtain *Mary* for his Wife, was put to the ſame death before her. *Elizabeth* in the mean while ſent aſſiſtance to thoſe of the reformed Religion in *France* that were in trouble, and for a pledge the ſtrongeſt

City

City in *France*, *Haver de Grace*, was delivered up to her; but when she refused to quit it again, the *French* King laid siege to it, and wan it from her.

At that time a sharp Dissention sprang up between *Philip* the second, and the *Low-Countreys*, which grew to a Warre; and *Elizabeth* led by the affinity of the Religion, and the nearness of those Countreys, assisted the United Provinces with Men and Money. For *Leicester* was sent with Forces into *Holland*, but when he exceeded his Commission, and arrogated too much power to himself, and by fraud attempted to make himself Master of the principal Towns, he lost the States good-will, and returned without honour into *England*. The Queen for this assistance was hated by the *Spaniard*, who had privately before laid snares for her life, but now he breaks forth into open Warre. For he raisd a mighty Fleet both in *Spain*, and in the *Low-Countries*, it being the best Navy for provision of Men and Munition that ever the Ocean bare, and carried the presumptuous Title of *Invincible*, it consisted of one hundred and thirty Ships, in which were nineteen thousand two hundred and ninety Souldiers, eight thousand three and fifty Marriners, two thousand and eighty Gally-slaves; two thousand six hundred and thirty great Ordinance; and the 19 of *July* 1588, they came within sight of *England*, and was in hopes to devour it. But by the valour of the *English* and the *Dutch*, the Fleet was partly hindred, partly worsted, but especially by a Tempest that rose against it, the *Spaniard* was disappointed of his hopes. From that

that time they break forth on both ſides into a fiery Warre, eſpecially by Sea, and in the *Weſt-Indies* and *Portugall*, the *Engliſh* did miſchief to the *Spaniard*, and received the like.

The Queen, when theſe Clouds of a Tempeſt at hand were diſperſed, cauſed a publick Thankſgiving to be made unto God, who had delivered her, and in Triumphant manner ſhe rid through *London*.

She was not for all this free from Troubles, but by the Queens Wiſdom and maſculine Valour, they were even ſtrangled in the Birth; and *England* was made the receptacle of perſecuted and afflicted men, who fled by companies out of *France* and *Holland* by reaſon of the Wars there.

In the mean while Sir *Francis Drake* was ſent toward *Hiſpaniola*, who made the *Spaniard* work enough in thoſe parts, taking *Cape Verde*, waſting *Hiſpaniola*, and he skirmiſhed in divers ſmall fights, with the *Spaniſh* Forces. But when there was no occaſion for a fight on the continent, he returned home with the ſpoil and honour. The next year alſo, the ſaid Sir *Francis Drake*, burnt and took ſix and thirty *Spaniſh* Ships laden with great riches that lay in the Haven at *Callis*, and brought them for *England*.

With the ſame ſucceſſe almoſt the Earle of *Eſſex*, with a vaſt Fleet of *Engliſh* and *Dutch*, waſted the Coaſts of *Spain*, and landing his men wan *Cades*, and plundering the City, and burning thirty Ships that rode in the Harbour, he came back for *England* laden with the ſpoil.

After

After that the *Engliſh* Fleet, watching the *Spaniſh* Navy that came fraught with rich Merchandize that came from the *Weſt-Indies*, was diſappointed by their flying into the Iſle *Tercera*.

France being involv'd in troubles, the Queen was pleaſed to aſſiſt the King of *France* with men and money.

The King of *France* having reduced his Subjects to their Obedience, endeavours to mediate a Peace betwixt the *Spaniards* and the Queen, the Queen to ſatisfie the *French* Kings deſires, ſent an Embaſſadour into *France* to conſult about it; But the States of *Holland* ſent Embaſſadours to Queen *Elizabeth* to dehort her from the Peace.

In the year 1598, *Philip* King of *Spain* died, in the ſeventieth year of his age: he aimed at great matters, but was unfortunate in moſt of them, whereupon it came to paſſe, that the three Keys of the *Spaniſh* Empire (which his Father ſo called, and willed him above all things to keep diligently) to wit, 1. *Gulet* in *Africa*, *Fluſhing* in *Holland*, and *Cadez* in *Spain*, were neglected; The firſt taken in by the *Turks*, the ſecond by the Confederates of the United Provinces, the third much impaired in its ſtrength, and impoveriſhed by the *Engliſh*; which his Father fore-ſeeing in his life-time, admoniſhed to make Peace with the *Engliſh*, and the United Provinces.

Anno 1599. died that Reverend and a famous Divine Mr *Richard Hooker*, a man moderate, temperate, meek and vertuous, even to the beſt imitation, and left behind him a living

ving monument of his reall worth, his Book entituled, *Eccleſiaſticall Policy.*

Then Peace was confirmed between the *Spaniard* and the *French*, but the *Engliſh*, and the United Provinces refuſed to be comprehended in it, becauſe they held it diſadvantagious to their Buſineſſe. But making a Covenant, with joynt Forces they invade *Spain*. The *Spaniard* ſtirs up the Earl of *Tyrone*, who made a great rebellion in *Ireland*. *Eſſex* was ſent thither to ſubdue the Rebels, and to make them conformable, but he ſcurvily neglected an opportunity of conquering the Enemy, and beyond his Commiſſion treats with the Rebels concerning Peace. He was therefore called home, and commanded to anſwer for his fault, by his ſubmiſſion he found the Queens favour. Afterward prompted on, either by ſhame, or his ambition of the Kingdom, he raiſed an Army, and entred *London*, and when he purpoſed to have forced the Queen, his Forces ran away from him, and he was taken priſoner, accuſed of High-Treaſon, and loſt his Head for it.

Charles Blunt was ſent in his place, who in divers fights wonderfully ſubdued the Forces of the Rebels, though the *Spaniard* had ſent many ſupplies to relieve them; In a ſet-Battel he overthrew *Tyrone*, and the *Auxiliary Spaniards*, and then made Conditions, driving them out of *Ireland*. *Tyrone* afterwards when he had tried all wayes, ſubmitted, and humbly intreated the Queens Pardon. In the mean time *Richard Leviſon* and *William Monſon*, with eight great Ships, and ſome ſmall ones, went and ſpoiled the *Spaniſh* Coaſts, and meeting the *Spaniards*

Fleet

Fleet coming from *America* with abundance of wealth, he ſet upon them, but was too weak for them, for he was diſappointed. After that he maſtered a very great rich Ship riding at Anchor in *Portugal*, and burning ſome leſſer Ships, he returned for *England* with her.

At that time the Seminaries of the Church of *Rome*, and chiefly the Jeſuites were baniſhed out of *England*, becauſe they cauſed troubles, and could not live quietly.

At laſt the Queen being feeble with age and hot diſeaſe, ſhe died in the year 1602. and was buried at *Weſtminſter*. She departed a very good Chriſtian, having named King *James* of *Scotland* Sonne to *Mary Stuart* to be her Succeſſour, when ſhe had raigned fourty four years and four moneths. A Queen that was moſt endowed with all the Benefits of Nature, a comely Perſon, for her Body, but more comely in her Soul, ſhe was an excellent Scholar, to be commended for her Goodneſſe and Juſtice; She was a Mother to her Subjects, and a Subject to the Laws.

JAMES, *King of* Great-Brittany, France *and* Ireland.

Jacobus. D. G. Rex. Ang: Sco: Fran: et Hib.

Anno 1602.

THe loss that *England* sustained by the death of *Elizabeth*, was abundantly recompensed by her Successour King *James*, and the union of the two Kingdoms *England* and *Scotland*. He was inferiour to her, neither for Religion, nor any thing else, and by new rejoycings he extin-

extinguiſhed that grief the Subjects had conceived. He was a King the more happy, becauſe he obtain'd a Kingdom by lawfull ſucceſſion, that was no wayes embroyled with Warres and Tumults, but ſetled in exceeding great Peace. But as in the calmeſt weather ofttimes clouds riſe ſuddenly, and it fals to thundering and lightning, ſo the affairs of *Brittany*, though moſt peaceably, were endangered by the malice and conſpiracy of ſome. The Ring-leaders were *Henry Cobham* and *George* his Brother, *Thomas Gray* of *Wiltſhire*, *Walter Raleigh*, and others. Their purpoſe was *to kill the King but newly crowned, to change Religion, to raiſe Tumults, to let in Forrainers*: A terrible deſign. But this flame vaniſhed into ſmoke, the principall being either put to death, or condemned to perpetual impriſonment, or having their pardons granted to them. But leaſt Peace ſhould be diſturbed by new Warres, he made Peace with the King of *Spain*, who was a ſworn Enemy to the *Engliſh* Nation, it was ſolemnly confirmed on both ſides.

Though Peace were ſetled abroad, yet there was occaſion for new Troubles at home; for when the King had called a Parliament, a very horrible Conſpiracy was detected, the chief Author of it was one *Catesby* a *Roman Catholick*; He having hamper'd ſome other men in the ſame buſineſs, endeavoured at one ſtroke to root out all the *Engliſh* Nation. as it were by Lightning from Heaven. For hiring a Cellar under the Parliament-Houſe, he laid in a vaſt deal of Gun-powder, which he purpoſed to ſet fire to, and ſo to blow up at once all the Parliament-

ment-Houſe, together with the King, the Prince, and all the Nobility; but the matter was diſcovered by the importunate care of the Conſpirators, who gave warning of the danger to the Lord *Mounteagle*, Sonne to the Lord *Morlay*, a Member of the Parliament, and one that they loved very well. In this Vault there were found terrible Inſtruments of this damned wickedneſs, that a man would wonder at, which were preſently taken away. Then the Conſpirators were executed, *Catesbey* with his companions, *John* and *Chriſtopher Wright*, and *Thomas Pierce* flying to his Arms was killed with a ſhot, others were taken and executed: Amongſt whom was *Everard Digby*, who was unwillingly drawn into this Conſpiracy, for otherwiſe he was a man of excellent parts. And thus that hainous wickedneſs that had troubled the Devils themſelves, was purged away.

In *Northampton* and *Warwickſhire* new tumults aroſe, firſt by *Fines*, then by *John Reignold*, that led them, but this faction was ſoon allayed, and the Authors were puniſhed.

In the mean time *Frederick* Count Elector *Palatine*, came to *London* to marry *Elizabeth* King *James* his Daughter. The Marriage was ſolemnized with wonderfull pomp; but all theſe joyes were overſhadowed with clouds of ſorrow, for on the ſixth day of *November* 1612, Prince *Henry* departed this life. Various reports were ſpread abroad by the vulgar, as if indirect means had been uſed, but his Phyſicians gave it under their hands, that he died of a violent, malignant Feaver. *Charles* the

Kings second Son succeeds him in the Principality of *Wales*.

About this time that Gallant and Noble Spirit Sir *Walter Rawleigh*, after fourteen yeares imprisonment, made addresses to the King to get leave to visit the New-found-World in *America*, to which he gave him liberty and a Commission under the great Seal to set forth Ships and Men for that Service; his Reputation and Merit caused many Gentlemen of quality to venture their Estates and Persons on the Design: Many considerable adventures were performed, though with great difficulty, but more especially that of the taking and burning S^t. *Thomes*. Information being sent to *Gondimer* who was Embassadour here in *England*, never rested assaulting the King with importunity for reparation. *Rawleigh* no sooner comes a shore at *Plimouth*, but he had secret information, and did endeavour to get from thence in a Bark for *Rochell*, but being apprehended by Sir *Lewis Stuckley*, he is brought to *London*, and committed to the Tower. *Gondimer* that looked upon him as a man that had not only high abilities, but animosity to do his Master mischief, being one of those scourges that Queen *Elizabeth* had made use of to afflict the *Spaniards*. Having now gotten him in the Trap he laid his Baits about the King: In *October* he vvas brought to the Kings Bench-barre at *Westminster*, before the Lord Chief-Justice, where the Records of his arraignment at *Wincheſter* were opened, and he demanded why the judgement should not be put in execution: *Rawleigh* replied, that Judgement was void by the Kings Com-

Commission for his late expedition; The Lord Chief-Justice replied, the opinion of the Court was to the contrary: He required time to prepare for death, but it was answered, the appointed time was the next-morning. Accordingly on the morrow he lost his Head on a scaffold in the Palace-yard.

The Earl of *Buckingham*, as great in Title as favour, was now grown a Marquesse, and lying in the Kings bosom, every man paid tribute to his smile; *Worcester* and *Nottingham* are taken off, for him to be Master of the Horse, and Admirall of *England*.

Queen *Anne* about that time fell sick and died. She was a Queen to be had in everlasting memory for her Noble vertues. The King also fell sicke, but by Gods assistance he recovered.

The Palsegrave in the mean time, who had married *Elizabeth*, by the prompting forward of some of the *German* Princes, was chosen King of *Bohemia*. The Emperour was wonderfully enraged at this Election, and proclaimed Warre against him, driving him first out of *Bohemia*, and afterwards out of all *Germany*, who in *Holland*, the common refuge for all wretched people, found a bountifull and safe entertainment. But *James*, that he might help his sonne in Law, made a motion for a Marriage of his Son *Charles*, and the *Spaniards* Daughter.

Charles is sent into *Spain* through *France* by Land, where he saw upon his journey, *Mary* Daughter to *Henry* the fourth. He was received in *Spain*, in outward appearance, magnifi-

nificently, but a dissention arising between the Duke of *Buckingham* and Count *Olivares*, the principall Don of the *Spanish* Court, the Treaty for the Marriage was drawn out at length, but *Charles* being impatient of delayes, was called home again by his Father, and arrived safe in *England*, and afterwards he married *Mary*, whom he had affectionately beheld in *France*.

What remains to be spoken of King *James*, is either scarce worth recording, or not so consonant to the truth. He died at last of a disease of the Spleen, though there were false reports spread abroad that he was poysoned, when he had reigned twenty two years, and was fifty nine years of age, in the year 1625. He was a true *Platonick* Prince, a Husband worthy of his Wife, an honest Father to his Children, a good King to his Subjects, because he was a Prince he was the Most Learned, and he was the Best Prince by reason of his Learning.

When this King reigned, the *English* Plantations were setled in the *Indies*, as in *Virginia*, which Country Sir *Walter Rawleigh* first discovered, and in the *Barmudoes*, whither an infinite multitude of Inhabitants presently resorted, building publick and private houses, and made a Common-wealth. The same was done by others in *New-England*, to the great comfort of such as were distressed and fled thither.

CHARLES

CHARLES *the First, King of* Great-Brittany, France *and* Ireland.

Carolus D. G. Rex Ang: Sco: Fran: et Hib:

Anno 1625.

CHARLES the first succeeded his Father, being twenty five yeares of age. The first design he had was to marry *Henrietta Mary*, Daughter to *Henry* the fourth King of *France*, as he purposed before, who landed in *England* the 22 day of *April*, and was received magnificently.

Then a Navy was prepared against the *Spaniard*, (for all friendship was grown stale between these two Kings, by reason of the breach of the Marriage, and the business of the *Palatinate*,) he joyned with the States of *Holland*, and sent away toward *Spain*, and first assaulting *Cadiz* and not prevailing, they set up sail to Sea, and spoyling all the *Spanish* Vessels they met, they return for *England*.

Now a Covenant was made between the *English* and the United Provinces, and they resolved with joynt Forces to tire out the *Spaniard*, but *Charles*, whose Exchequer was emptied by reason of his great Expence of his *Spanish* Voyage, and setting forth of his Navy, was forced to call a Parliament, but *Buckingham* the Kings chief Minister of State, and most dear unto him, had yet given no answer to his Charge, whereupon they demurred to supply the King with Subsidies, wherefore he was forced to finde out some other wayes to raise moneys, wherewith he provided a mighty Fleet once more, wherewith, assisted by the *Flemish* Ships, he spoyled all the *Spanish* Ships they met, either coming from *Spain*, or sailing thither, and did wonderfully annoy the very *Spanish* Coasts; but when the *French* were not spared, a stop was made in *France* of some *English* Vessels, and the Merchants Goods were Confiscate. The Ministers of the Church of *Rome* had heightned the indignation, those that came into *England* with the Queen, and these did what they could privately to trouble the *English* affairs. They were commanded to leave the Land, but they were sent away with

good

good gifts and rewards. The *French* offended at this as an injury, ſent Monſieur *Baſſompeir* Extraordinary Embaſſadour into *England*, who prevailed ſo farre that ſome vvere re-call'd.

The *French* were not ſatisfied with this, but forbad all Commerce with the *Engliſh* Subjects, and *Charles* did the like. Envy increaſing, *Lewis* oppreſſed the *Rochellers*; *Charles* ſent relief to the beſieged, though he prevailed but little, ſome mens hearts flagging, vvho returned for *England*, and for their ſluggiſhneſs, they were caſt into priſon. But chiefly ſharp complaints were charged by the Parliament againſt *Buckingham*, who was the Commander of this Expedition: *That he had delivered ſome Sea Towns to the Cuſtody of ſome Souldiers that received no pay from the* Engliſh, *and had made ſtrangers Commanders of them in Chief. That to the great detriment and hazard of the Kingdom, he had brought* German *Souldiers into* England. *That by his perſwaſion one Parliament was called after another and nothing done. That he had put many worthy Noble men from their places undeſervedly, and put men leſs deſerving into their places. That Warlike Expeditions undertaken imprudently had alwayes an ill end, as was freſh in memory by the* Rochell *buſineſs. That Merchandiſe failed by this meams. That he had turned another way ſuch preparations as were made for Warre, and had deſtroyed a multitude of Shipping by his ill managing of buſineſs.* &c.

Charles to ſtop all farther proceedings againſt *Buckingham*, preſently diſſolved the Parliament,

ment, and being overcome with the continuall prayers of the beſieged, he raiſed new Forces to ſend to aſſiſt the *Rochellers*, under the command of the Duke of *Buckingham*, but when he was ready to Embarque himſelf, he was ſtabbed with a knife by *Felton* an *Engliſh* man (who by this act did ſacrifice himſelf for his Country) but he was taken when he had done it, and was hanged for his pains.

Then a new Parliament was ſummoned; the King complained that Tunnage was denied him; the anſwer was made that ſuch ſupplies were never granted to the Kings but upon urgent neceſſity, and therefore it were better that he ſhould look to prevent the wrongs that were every where crept in; whereupon the Parliament was once more Diſſolved.

Then there was a *ſuperſedeas* to all buſineſs, for if any man did not pay that Cuſtom, he incurred the Kings diſpleaſure, and if any did pay, then he incurred the diſpleaſure of the Parliament, and hereupon grew cauſe enough for following miſchiefs. The King offended at the malepartneſs of the Parliament, caſt Sir *John Eliot* and ſome other Members of Parliament into priſon, and appointed Judges to take cognizance of their Fact, they ſuppoſing themſelves choſen beſides the Cuſtom, deferred to meddle with the buſineſs, being doubtfull what to do, the King preſſed them on one hand, and the people on the other. The Kings Officers ſent Meſſengers to the Merchants, whom they call uſually Adventurers, exhorting them that they would ſet their Merchandiſe to ſale, as they were wont, ſaying the King would take

care

care of all, only let them pay their Cuſtom, which thing they refuſed to do, without conſent of Parliament.

The other Merchants did the ſame, for it was freſh in their memories, that about an hundred years before, the Merchants had a penalty ſet upon them, who paid their Cuſtom, the Parliament being againſt it, in memoriall whereof, that poſterity might not plead ignorance, a Chappel was built, which at this day is called *Alderman-Bury*; and a ſtranger Merchant, who paying the Cuſtom, had ſet his Merchandiſe to ſale, was excluded from all Commerce. And for this reaſon there was cauſe given for both ſides to be diſpleaſed. In the *interim* Peace was ratified with *France*, and the Queen was brought a Bed of her firſt-born *Charles*. The *Spaniard* alſo was hampred with divers Warres, and want of moneys, and therefore he thought it better to make Peace vvith *Charles*, than to be brought to a finall deſperation, yet the King and his Subjects were never the better agreed.

New and greater cauſes of diſſention aroſe: The King had taken care that the Book of Common-Prayer ſhould be re-printed, that ſuch as had not the ſame gift of minde, might have ſomething for their imitation, and by a ſet form ſhould be ſtirred up to more attentiveneſs. This form was read in Churches and Houſes at that time through all *England*. But the *Scotch*, a ſcrupulous people in their opinion, vvho are more afraid of the name of *yielding*, than *reſiſting*, and would ſooner *offend againſt Religion*, than *the Ceremonies of it*,

did

did publickly refuse it, but they especially, who held forth affected purity, were called Puritans.

Charles to regulate the obstinate, presently musters an Army to invade *Scotland*. *James Hamilton* was the cause of it, who was sent into *Scotland* to allay the peoples mindes before it should come to a Warre, but he dealt deceitfully, for having a desire to the Crown of *Scotland*, he endeavoured to raise dissentions; and hoped to fish best in troubled waters. The *Scotch* on the other part, that they might not idly wait for their own destruction, meet the King with their Forces, but their Banners and Ensignes were not displayed, and in token of humility they laid their Arms down before him on the ground. But when both Armies stood now ready, the *English*, that they might not strive with their Brethren, refused to fight, wherefore he was forced to make Peace with the *Scots* upon no good conditions, which being ratified, he came back to *London*.

He was scarce returned, but some factious fellows, and such as by troubles and Warre hoped to make their own advantage, speak against the Kings sluggishness, and stirred him up; who was already prone enough to make a new Warre against the *Scots*; whereupon he goes once more with an Army into *Scotland*, and by the same contumacy of his Souldiers, as before, he was frustrate of his intentions.

The *Scotch* also made a nearer agreement amongst themselves against the King, which they called their [Covenant.] The King therefore

fore when he was distressed for want, cals a Parliament, and asks Subsidies of them, but it was in vain, wherefore he was forced to fly to other Artifices. The Queen that was pressed with the same care the King was, dealt with the Earl *Charles Rosset*, and with other Ministers of the *Barbarines*, *Pausanius* and *Cunæus*, to procure a supply out of the Popes Treasury (yet it is supposed that the King knew nothing of it) promising if she prevailed, that the Catholicks in *Ireland* should have greater liberty in their Religion. But *Rosset* denied that any such assistance could be granted to any, unless to a Catholick Prince (as they term it) but if the King would abjure the reformed Religion, and cleave to the Church of *Rome*, he promised all assistance; but he hating such a sacriledge, nothing was done.

Rosset for this business was in great danger; for the *English*, who after they had renounced the *Roman* Religion, hated his name more than the Plague, or death it self, when they saw that his followers had more freedom, and were not ignorant of *Rosset*, who was the Author of it, they make a tumultuous head against him, that they might tear in pieces this hurtfull instrument of so hatefull superstition; but he hardly escaping in disguised apparell, hid himself amongst the friends of the Queen-Mother, *Mary de Medicis*, who at that time was in *England*, and afterwards he escaped all danger, by the assistance of *John Justinian* the *Venetian* Embassadour, and Embarking himself he sailed into *Flanders*; but when he came to *Rome*, Pope *Urban* the eighth re-

rewarded his good ſervice with a Cardinals Cap.

The *Iriſh* in the *interim* were broke forth into a new Rebellion, and the Parliament uſed all means to finde a remedy for ſuch a miſchief. And the King being not at quiet, cauſed the Liturgy to be new printed, which he impoſed upon all the Churches in *England*, and forbad all Ceremonies to be uſed otherwiſe than they were in Queen *Elizabeths* dayes. In the mean while, that no new cauſe of diviſions might be wanting, ſeven *Romiſh* Prieſts are caſt into priſon, and are condemned by the Parliament to ſuffer death; but the *French* Embaſſadour pitied their miſerable condition, and ſued to the King for their pardon; the King anſwered he could grant nothing in that buſineſſe, without conſent from his Parliament. Then it was motioned to the Parliament, who preſently yeilded to it. The King when he knew this, thought by an importunate anticipation to gain the thanks of that buſineſſe to himſelfe, and of his own accord commands the Prieſts to be freed from the priſon. The Parliament was angry at the Kings over-forwardneſſe, and changed their former decree of freedome into a ſentence of condemnation. The King he began to urge their diſcharge, and to ſtand upon it, reſolving never to leave the buſineſſe, untill the Parliament were met in a full number, and ſhould give their finall determination. They of their own accord cauſe one or two of theſe Monks to be put to death. It is wonderfull how great good-will of the people they procured to themſelves by this deed,

deed, especially when by their publick writings they began to infringe the Kings Authority, using such sweet words to the people, that might win their good liking of it. The King in the House of Peers complaines of the insolence of the Lower House, and by a sharpe Speech inveighed against their stubbornnesse, saying, that he neither could or would wink at so great affronts. Others again complain against the Kings too great Power, and desire remedies.

The King in the mean time strove to put out some from their places of publick employment, and to put in others; amongst the rest, he put out *Mountjoy* from his Lievtenants place of the Tower, and put in another that stood fast to his part. The Lower House interprets this businesse, as if the King strove to draw all the power of Government to himselfe, and accused this new Lievtenant before the Upper House, for a factious person, and who was before condemned by the Judges to dye, and therefore a man unfit for so weighty an imployment. They added farther, that this matter could not be without danger, for he having the command of the Tower might destroy all the City of *London*. The Upper House answered, *That unlesse they would put their sickle into another mans Corne, it were wickednesse in them to hinder the King in that matter, for it was an ancient, and received prerogative of the Kings*, openly refusing their consent.

Nor was it long ere a multitude of Servants (which they call Apprentices) and a rabble of other people, came to the Hall door, crying out

out and thundering, that unleſſe they would remove out of that place the Lieytenant of the Tower, who was a Papiſt, a factious, a wicked, and unworthy man, they would turne all upſide down; and they prevailed by this meanes ſo farre, that both the King and the Lords were forced to conſent.

Nor was this furious multitude of the people content with this, but they made a freſh onſet to aboliſh the Government of Biſhops, and would have them all to be forewarned the Parliament Houſe, for that they were addicted (as they pretended) to the Church of *Rome*, and to force them to it, they run like furies into *Weſtminſter* Abby, that was venerable for it's Antiquity, and they fall in their rage upon the Garments, Organs, Sepulchres, and ſpoil all that was either comely for its Ancientneſſe, precious for coſt, or to be valued for curious Workmanſhip; they hardly ſpared the Bones and Aſhes of the dead, their impure purity had hurried them ſo farre. Then they run to the Kings Court, crying, urging and thundring out the ſame things. The King bad them all go about their buſineſs, threatning them with ſevere puniſhment that refuſed, and leaſt the next day they ſhould terrifie him with greater multitudes, he fortified himſelf with a ſtronger Guard. The Parliament either fearing themſelves (or becauſe they would not be inferiour to the King) require a ſtrong Guard of Souldiers to defend them, the Earl of *Eſſex* might be the Captain of it. The King neither granted nor denied it. Then they attempted a new buſineſs, and that was not uſual, appoint-

ing

ing an extraordinary Aſſembly in the City, that ſhould manage all weighty and great occurrences, and this they did, without the Kings leave or knowledge. And to weaken his Majeſty the more, or rather to ſatisfie the inſolence of the people, they caſt twelve Biſhops into priſon, becauſe they went about to maintain their priviledge by the publick Charter. That buſineſs much troubled the King, and all thoſe that loved the publick quiet above all things, but they that hoped to finde ſome good for themſelves out of theſe toſſings and tumults, did laugh in their ſleeves, fomenting the troubles, and turning every ſtone, untill ſuch time as the Earl of *Briſtol*, and his ſonne were involved in the ſame danger (*Strafford* the year before loſt his Head to ſatisfie the people, who was a man of a commendable and moſt approved underſtanding) *William Laud* Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and Primate of *England* followed him. But now they touched his bowels, for they began to accuſe the Queens Majeſty, as if ſhe had privately cauſed the troubles in *Ireland*, and had ſecretly moved that people (that are of themſelves inconſtant enough) to rebell. The King moved with this, accuſed five of the Lower Houſe, and one of the Upper Houſe of High Treaſon. Their Names were, the Lord Viſcount *Mandevill*, Maſter *Pym*, Mr *Hambden*, Sir *Arthur Haſelrig*, Mr *Holis*, and Mr *Strowd*, clearly demonſtrating that they were the men, that had given occaſion for theſe Tumults and Diſſentions.

The Articles of their accuſation were theſe:

That they endeavoured to overthrow the Fundamental Laws, and the Kings Authority.

That

That they ſtrove to alienate the hearts of the Subjects from him.

That by the ſame Artifice they had ſollicited the Kings Souldiers to revolt.

That they had procured ſtrangers to help them to poſſeſſe the Kingdom.

That they attempted to caſt down the Parliament, and the Priviledges of it.

That they contrived to bring both Houſes to themſelves, and to their Opinions, and therefore they cauſed that concourſe and commotion of the People.

Laſtly, *That they had blown up this fire of War againſt his Majeſty.*

Theſe Articles being read to the Lower-Houſe, the King required that ſome ſhould be ſent to ſeize preſently on their Writings, but ſome were ſent to the King to diſſwade him from it, and in the name of the Parliament, they would be Surety for the fidelity of the Members accuſed. But the King anſwered, That he required Obedience from his Subjects without enquiring into his Reaſons. Others again urged, That the King by this Act had overthrown the Priviledges of Parliament, and noted this Accuſation to be a famous Libell.

The King was reſolved to oppoſe Force againſt Force, he requires aſſiſtance from the Souldiery, and haſteneth to the Hall with five hundred armed men after him, and commanding them all to wait at the door, he only entered into the Houſe with an angry Countenance, and when he ſaw none of thoſe that were accuſed, he ſeriouſly relates his good Intentions to the Parliament, and to the Laws and Priviledges thereof, requiring

that

that thoſe Members he accuſed might be delivered up to him; and ſo he went back to his Palace the ſame way as he came, and ſent a Herauld once more to finde out thoſe he had charged. Then he goes again himſelf to the Houſe, where the reſt of the Members ſate, and did renue his diſcourſe, whereby he expreſſed his good Inclination, and laboured to remove the envy from himſelf, that lay upon him, ſaying, That he would change nothing, nor do otherwiſe than what was done in Queen *Elizabeths* dayes; Then he went to Dinner to one of the Sheriffs houſes, and was in ſome danger by reaſon of the enraged multitude. But the Lower-Houſe taking Counſell with the Upper, reſolved by all means to revenge this rigour of the King that he had uſed againſt their Priviledges, they preſently put the City in Arms, cauſed them to ſhut up their Shops, and the ſitting was adjourned for five dayes. Alſo the Parliament forbad the Citizens, that no man ſhould help the King to finde out, thoſe that were accuſed, rendring the King as hatefull to the People as they could, and ſhaking his Authority. The King, when he might have made uſe of this Diviſion between the two Houſes to overthrow the attempts of the People, breaks forth into violent anger, ſets a Guard upon the Tower of *London*, and once more declares the accuſed to be guilty of High Treaſon, forbidding all men either to conceal them, or to convey them away, promiſing their Eſtates to any that ſhould diſcover them, either alive or dead. But men were ſo farre from obeying the King, that the accuſed Members, guarded with a multitude of Citizens, took their places again

as before in Parliament; yet this was not ſufficient, for the Parliament publiſhed through the City, That the King intended to ruine the Citizens, That his Forces were now ready to do it, which did not a little exaſperate the minde of the Citizens: But the Aldermen of the City took a better courſe, and humbly certified the King, That the Commonalty were too much incenſed already, and therefore he ſhould let paſſe bitter counſell, and finde out ſome way to compoſe the matter. The King anſwered them with the greateſt moderation, greatly complaining that his Authority was violated.

But the Parliament, when they had brought the buſineſſe ſo farre, thought not fit to give it over, but on the 16 day of *January*, in the year 1642, raiſed a vaſt multitude of Citizens, and others, as it was pretended, to defend the Houſes, that they might aſſemble freely, and Letters were forthwith ſent to other neighbouring Counties, whereby they were commanded to draw up in Arms all the Forces they could, under colour to defend the Laws and Liberties. Upon this occaſion there came together a mighty Army, ſo that at leaſt 20000 were ready at a beck.

The King having timely notice of it, leaving the City, makes haſte to *Hampton* Court, commanding his Counſellours to follow him, eſpecially the Earls of *Eſſex* and *Holland*, but they refuſed, wherefore the King with a ſmall company, took his journey like one that fled, ſo that for haſte, being he had no Purveyors, to provide room for him ſufficiently, He, his Wife and Children the firſt night, were conſtrained to tumble all in one Bed.

He

He being now eſcaped from out of their hands, by Proclamations endeavoured to maintain his own Cauſe before the whole world, but he wanted help.

It was otherwiſe with the Parliament, for all *London* now ſtood againſt the King, ready in Arms. The Streets and croſs-wayes were ſtopped with Chains, and Barres, and Cannon mounted; Alſo the Parliaments Forces were augmented by an addition of foure thouſand Horſe Souldiers that came to them. The Boats and Barks were fitted for the Warre, and moſt of the Citizens ſervants and Apprentices, were at a call to joyn with the Parliament, and being armed, what with Clubs, what with Sticks, what with Swords, and other Weapons, they came and guarded the Parliament-Houſe, as Halberd-men; And from that time the meeting was not at *Weſtminſter*, as before, but in the City, that they might the better win the minds of the Citizens to themſelves, and be nearer to their buſineſſe. Though the King being asked his opinion thereof by *Eſſex*, did flatly deny it, wherefore they are reſolved to ſet upon the Kings ſtubborn minde (as they ſaid.) They commanded the Governours of Sea-Towns, not to obey the Kings Orders, unleſs they were confirmed by the Authority and Seal of the Parliament, at one blow almoſt cutting off all the Kings Authority. This might have been prevented, had he by good counſell taken poſſeſſion of thoſe Towns, and put in Souldiers to keep them for him.

The King, when he ſaw they provided Force, and that he was not ſafe at *Hampton* Court, rides preſently to *Windſor*, thither came the *French*

Embaſſadour to him, who offered to be Umpire between the King and his Subjects, but when neither King nor Queen would give any great credit to his words, he did prevail but little. But now the King firſt ſaw that he was deceived of his hopes, when he imagined that *Wales* and *Yorkſhire* were revolted from him, at the report of what was paſt, and for fear of them his Counſel was troubled.

But the Parliament (which the King in his ſtraights was not ignorant of) thought fit to proceed, and did preſcribe Conditions to the King, Namely, That the *Engliſh* ſhould be governed the ſame way as the *Scotch* were, and ſo that they might call a Parliament as often as they pleaſed, and aſſign Offices to whom they thought fit, that the Biſhops ſhould be ejected out of the Parliament, whom they found more addicted to the Kings ſide, and many ſuch like Propoſitions.

In the mean time, the Houſes take into their Power the Towns of greateſt concernment, amongſt which *Hull* was one; The King had ſent the Earl of *New caſtle* thither before to demand it for himſelf, but the Townſmen, who had firſt received order from the Parliament, being doubtful what to do, were between hope and fear, but then being confirmed with a farther order from the Parliament, they excluded the King. Wherefore being defrauded of his hope, he reſolves upon more milde counſels, and ſent Letters to the two Houſes, deſiring them not to proceed ſo harſhly, to leave off their violence, proteſting his Innocence and ſincere intention before God and man. But the

Parlia-

Parliament little moved by theſe words, take care in the mean time for the buſineſs of *Ireland*, giving Licence to *Martin Tromp* the Admiral of *Holland* to ſearch all *Dunkirk* Ships, even in the very *Engliſh* Havens. Alſo *Digby* and *Lunsford* that were addicted to the King, are accuſed of High Treaſon, the one was taken, the other eſcaped into *Holland*. Then they ſend Meſſengers to the King, and gave him thanks for his Letters, deſiring his Majeſty to returne to *London*. The King, though he were pleaſed with their gratitude, yet refuſed to come to the Parliament, leaſt the people by their Inſolence ſhould again put him in danger. The Parliament was much diſpleaſed with this refuſall of the King, becauſe the traffique did not proceed well, and becauſe they could not preſs their deſigns as they would. Whereupon the Lower Houſe drew up an Humble Remonſtrance, *whereby they deſired Power to beſtow all places of Government both by Sea and Land, upon whom they thought fit, and to fortifie Towns with Ammunition and Proviſion neceſſary, as they pleaſed.* And proceeding yet farther, *They asked that the old Servants of the Queen, both Engliſh and French, and ſuch as were her Prieſts might be baniſhed, and the Biſhops and Lords addicted to the Popiſh Religion, might be excluded from the Parliament-Houſe. That a Synod of fifty Miniſters might be called. That the Princes and Lords ſhould be forbidden to go out of the Land, or to make any Covenant with forraign Princes or Commonwealths, without the Parliaments conſent.* Laſtly, *They deſired that the King ſhould take an Oath to hold no counſell with the Queen in Church or State affairs.*

The Lords of the Upper Houſe were not well pleaſed with theſe Propoſitions, for that the Kings Authority was palpably infringed by them. The Lower Houſe was angry at that, and fell to their former Artifice, and threatned to raiſe the people, and incite them againſt the Nobility, as Enemies to the Common-wealth, and addicted to the Kings ſide. The Lords regarded not their threats, untill they ſaw the Commons uniting themſelves by counſell from the Lower Houſe, and (which is to be admired) they found the Commiſſioners of *Scotland*, to joyn with them againſt the profit of their own Countrey. At laſt they were terrified with theſe things, and fore-ſeeing greater dangers, they conſent, though it were againſt their wills. Twenty choſen men therefore are ſent to the King with theſe Conditions, which when the King beheld, he undertook to ask Counſell thereupon, and to deliver his minde in writing. But when he was preſſed with ſtraights on all ſides, he yielded to theſe Conditions, namely, *That the Parliament ſhould ſtore the Cities of the Kingdom with proviſion, upon this ground that the King ſhould firſt be made acquainted what proviſion they would make, and to beſtow the Offices, ſo that of three men choſen, the King might chooſe one. As for the Biſhops and the reſt, as being matters of great moment, he would adviſe farther.* The Kings Conſent was received by the Parliament with great applauſe, though they could have deſired the termes of his Grant had been larger, for by this Authority they increaſed in power as much as the King decreaſed. They brought the buſineſſe ſo farre, that the power ſhould be in their hands ſo long as the

Parlia-

Parliament ſate, which they meant for ever: For the King by a dangerous Indulgence, had granted them leave before to ſit ſo long as they pleaſed, they being not to be diſſolved without their own Conſent. And that this power granted to them might not prove unfruitfull, they preſently put out ſome Governours, and put in others. Nor are they content with this, but being higher by the Kings Grants, they petition that the ſix Members ſhould be cleared from all guilt, and to be freed from attainder, the King was reſolved to yeild to all, and did grant what they asked.

The Kings courage was ſo farre weakned, that he lifted up the Power of his Adverſaries, and pulled down the hopes of his friends, who truſting but little to his over great lenity, thought it beſt to avoyd the ſtrokes or misfortune now hanging over their heads. Part of them forſaking the Parliament, went home to their houſes; Part of them preferring voluntary baniſhment before continuall fear, went out of the Land, for they had now got the power of all into their hands, and did what they pleaſed, no man daring to whiſper againſt it.

And now that plenty of Parliament-Members was ſo diminiſhed, that in the Upper Houſe there were left not above five and twenty, in the Lower Houſe ſcarce fourſcore, the Kings friends ſtill falling off, that at laſt there were hardly ſixteen in the Houſe of Lords. In the mean time they raged fiercely againſt thoſe that were addicted to the *Romiſh* Religion, and they provide a Fleet with the Kings Treaſure, to defend the Mediterranean Sea upon all occaſions, whereby his Power was diminiſhed, and his authority broken. The

Queen alſo was ſo tired out with ſo many calumnies and aſperſions, that ſhe reſolved to ſail into *Holland*, and to accompany her Daughter to her Husband the Prince of *Orange* to whom ſhe was eſpouſed. And the Parliament to leave the King naked of that ſuccour eaſily yielded to it. The King that he might clearly demonſtrate that he by his preſence had been no cauſe of any of thoſe evils; before his departure had conſented to the Petition of the Parliament, to exclude the Biſhops out of the Houſe, (which was not the leaſt of his failings) And to diſcover his minde plainly toward the Reformed Religion, he cauſed ſevere Statutes to be publiſhed againſt the Papiſts, and baniſhed all their Prieſts out of the Kingdom. 'Tis marvellous with how great joy the people accepted that. Bon-fires were made in triumph at *London*, and in other places, it may be it was done, becauſe the Kings Power was now ended.

The Queen in the mean time imbarqued at *Dover*, and with true tears took her laſt farewell, fore-ſeeing that this departure of hers was an *omen* of a moſt ſad Divorce.

The Parliament in the *interim*, asked the Kings conſent upon ſome Governours of the Kingdom they had choſen. But the King who was now ſenſible of his errours, began to draw back, and to delay the buſineſs. They impatient of all delayes, ſend Commiſſioners to him, to let him underſtand, *That the Parliament muſt flie to their Arms, and defend their Authority by force, unleſſe the King would preſently grant their juſt Petitions* (as they ſaid.) And when the King reſolved to remove farther from *London*, they entreated

entreated him not to do it, but rather if he would not, he ſhould let his Sonne live at *London*. The King not wondring a little at this Petition, anſwered, *That he was by theſe Propoſitions much amazed, but what to anſwer he knew not. He would have them lay their hands on their hearts, and would ſearch whether of the two gave the cauſe now of miſchiefs that would ariſe from a Civil Warre. As for his Sonne, he would as a Father provide for him, and that neither of them would go from London, unleſs they were afraid of the Inſolency of ſome people there. And that he deſired to procure Peace by all means, not caring who took up Arms, for he would reſt on Gods providence.* So their Meſſengers were diſmiſſed.

But the Parliament, ſuppoſing they were not now to demur, command all the Lievtenants of the Counties by their Edicts, to flie to their Arms, and to compell all their Subjects that were fit to bear Arms to repair to their Colours. And forthwith they unpowred all thoſe Officers the King had made, and made new ones by their own Authority. The moſt excellent and the wiſeſt men were of opinion, that all that proviſion of the Parliament would diſſolve into ſmoke. The *London* Counſel alſo thought themſelves wronged by this unuſual and unheard of boldneſs in the Parliament, for by this means they were ſtript of all their Authority. They complain of it to the King, but what ſhould he do, whoſe hands were already bound, and he did not ſtrive to unbinde them. Then they put up their humble Petitions to the Parliament, to which the principal Citizens of *London* ſubſcribed their hands.

But

But when they waited for an Anſwer, as it was requiſite, the principall of the Subſcribers were puniſhed. So all things grew worſe and worſe. The King in the mean time, who was not ignorant of the Parliament Attempts, called all his Nobility to him, that he might put a ſtop to the Parliament proceedings; The Parliament to lull the King aſleep with faire words, uſed all devices, and when this would not do, they overweigh him with complaints and crimes, *As that he had hearkned to a change in Religion, and given cauſe for the uproars in Ireland, ſpecially they that were moſt powerfull with him, ſecretly beſpotting the Queen.*

They added, That the Inſtruments of the Pope, of the Kings of *Spain* and *France*, were reſolved to reſtore the King to his fotmer Authority, and other things that ſerved to juſtifie their own proceedings, and to make the King faulty.

The King publiſhed his Declarations, labouring to remove theſe aſperſions from him, and to decline the hatred of them, yet prevailed nothing, for the Parliament by a new Declaration, did both ſupport and augmented the former Articles, complaining that the greateſt injury was done to themſelves by the Kings forſaking them.

The King in the mean time takes his journey for *York*, together with the Prince, the Palſgrave, the Duke of *Richmond*, and ſome other of the Nobility, being reſolved to be deluded no farther, but to oppoſe Force againſt Force, and the Right he could not maintain by yeilding, to maintain by Arms.

The

The Parliament did not ſit ſtill, but fortified the chief Towns with Ammunition and Souldiers, eſpecially *Hull*, a City of greateſt concernment.

Alſo the Earl of *Warwick* was ſent with thirty men of Warre, to guard the *Engliſh* Coaſts, and they call Vice-Admiral *Pennington* back again by ſpeedy Meſſengers, who had tranſported the Queen into *Holland*, and under pretence of ſubduing Rebellion, they gather a mighty maſs of money.

Charles in the mean time to overthrow their Commands, prohibits what they would have by Edicts to the contrary; but they diſobeying the King, did their work by frighting him with threats, which was a great grief to moderate men.

The King when he was come to *York*, was received with the higheſt affection of his Subjects, and before them all he removeth all that envy of Popery that was charged upon him.

But the Parliament, who were not well pleaſed with the *Yorkſhire* men for this, ſent Letters to the King, inſerting fair ſpeeches, to pacifie his anger. They write a counterfeit Letter in the name of *Elizabeth* Counteſs *Palatine*, as written by her, wherein they did foully defame the States of *Holland* for her ill entertainment amongſt them. To avoyd the hatred of this buſineſſe, *Joachimus*, the States Embaſſadour, complained to the Parliament of the falſity of that report, becauſe his Maſters Honours were much ſhadowed by it, whoſe ſplendor and benevolence toward ſtrangers, was ſufficiently known to all the world; and he prevailed ſo farre that theſe counterfeit Letters were publickly burnt.

A Rumour alſo as falſe as the former was ſcattered abroad, that a great Fleet was made ready for King *Charles* in the *Denmark* Havens; and thus each on both ſides ſtrive to draw reputation and authority to their party. They had long enough banded in words, they muſt now come to blows. Ere long they break forth into open Warre. The King calls all the Knights of the Garter, and all others that by the band of Nobility held from the Crown, to come to him to *York*. The Parliament contrarily made it death for any of them to go to the King, yet of the Lower Houſe twenty Members revolt to the King, making more reckoning of the Kings commands than of the Parliaments.

In the mean time there followed an humble Petition of the men of *Kent*, to the Parliament, wherein they humbly deſired,

That nothing ſhould be done without the Kings conſent.

That the Liturgy might not be altered.

That the Biſhops might be reſtored.

That they would not ſuffer the Fundamentall Laws of the Land to be antiquated without the Kings permiſſion, nor Arms to be raiſed without his command.

That ſome good means might be found out to make an agreement, &c.

But the Parliament not only denied to anſwer them; but they ſeverely puniſh him that brought the Petition, and the Earl of *Briſtol* that received it, caſting both of them into Priſon, to cut off for the future all way for ſuch requeſts, their fellows not a little raging at it, and ſaying openly, that that liberty was unjuſtly

taken

taken away, when as they had liſtned to other Petitions that were farre more unequall than that was.

The Parliament in the mean time, when they found nothing done by the Commiſſioners they had ſent to the King, reſolve to execute their former commands, they command the Lievtenants of Counties to perform what they formerly had enjoyned them, and preſently to raiſe ſuch an Army, who willingly went about it, hoping from troubles to finde occaſion to do their buſineſs, yet ſome looking deeper into it, refuſed to raiſe Arms without the Kings Order.

Alſo the Houſes purpoſed to remove *Pennington* that was come back again, becauſe they found him more enclined to the King than to the Parliament, but he denied to yeild to them, unleſs the King ſhould force him to it. The King truſting to his fidelity, refuſed to diſcharge him, and to receive *Warwick* whom they would ſubſtitute. But the Lower Houſe (the Upper Houſe being againſt it, who held it unfit to proceed without the Kings conſent) preſſed the buſineſs, and confirmed the firſt Election, and being exaſperated by the Kings inclination, reſolved ſeriouſly for to make a Warre of it. All the proviſion of *Hull* or other Garriſons, they commanded to be brought to *London*, fearing leaſt the King ſhould at ſome time poſſeſs himſelf of the Town and Ammunition: But they to whoſe truſt theſe things were committed, would not deliver them without command from the King. They valued not all their threats and commands to have the Governour of the Town delivered up unto them.

In

In the mean time the *Sommerſetſhire* men deteſting the obſtinacy of the Parliament, by example of the Men of *Kent*, preſented an humble Petition to the Parliament; but they offended with their boldneſs, command it to be burned by the Hangman, to deterre the *Sommerſetſhire* men from profering any more ſuch Petitions, who were charged to come in no greater multitudes than was requiſite.

The King alſo deſired to ſail into *Ireland* with a ſufficient Army to tame the Rebels. But the Houſes fearing leaſt he ſhould allure the Rebels to joyn with him, and being ſtrengthened with their Forces, ſhould return for *England*, denied him his requeſt, and preferred their own fears before the relief of ſo many miſerable men. He in the mean time depoſed the Earl of *Eſſex* from being Chamberlain, and *Leiceſter* from being Deputy of *Ireland*, and the Earl of *Holland*, for their diſobedience. But the Houſes on the contrary forbid all of them to do any ſuch thing without their prohibition, on penalty of their lives: alſo they confirmed *Warwicks* Authority. And that they might fortifie the mindes of all men the more, and exaſperate them againſt the King, they ſpread a report, that there was a great proviſion made by him for Warre againſt the Common-wealth, and the Laws, ſaying that all the Subjects were therefore freed from their Oaths. The King holds forth the contrary in his Declarations: And when ſome *Lincolnſhire* men came to him in Troops, and offered to defend the Kings Cauſe, he forbad them ſtifly; and to manifeſt to all his love of Peace, he commanded them all to go home again, upon the con-

condition that they ſhould return to aſſiſt him when they were called. He detained only 500 Foot, and 50 Horſe for his Life-Guard. Many of the Nobility were drawn by this lenity of the King to revolt to him. The Lord Keeper of the Great Seal, that had done him ſo many injuries, asking pardon of the King, was friendly received by him. This was the cauſe that many others fell away, ſo that in the Upper-Houſe there remained not above fifteen, and they the moſt bitter againſt him. Theſe with new repreſentations concerning the Education of his Children, the Officers of the Kingdom, and ſuch like queſtions wearied the Kings minde. But they prevailed nothing, for thoſe Captains and Souldiers that were muſtered againſt the Rebels in *Ireland*, leaving their Colours freely, fled to the King at *York*: Whereupon the King augmented his Life-Guard to 1200 Foot, and 200 Horſe, all deſcended of Noble Families, and for the greater Honour to them; he made the Prince of *Wales* their Captain. Theſe being required to manifeſt their fidelity, did all ſwear unanimouſly to defend the Kings Cauſe, but all the Nobility offered willingly to raiſe ſeverally 200 Foot in Arms, if occaſion were. By which conſtancy of the Subject, and by a ſmall ſumme of money he received out of *Holland*, the King began to be cheered with new hopes.

Then he appointed the *Yorkſhire* men to meet him at a certain place, on the 13th day of *June*, not farre from *York*, who accordingly came with about 60000. The King with his Sonne, ſome Lords, 600 Horſe, and a conſiderable

derable party of Foot, met them there, and with a premeditated ſpeech, he declared his good intention toward Religion, the Parliament, and to defend his own Rights and Kingly Dignity. Alſo he made an Apology for the good of his Souldiers that were preſent; then he ſhewed unto them the Acts of Parliament. Laſtly, he promiſed good pay, if any man would aſſiſt him, becauſe he deſired to uſe the help of his Subjects rather than ſtrangers. This Speech was received by ſome with great applauſe, others made their humble Petition that the King would hold a good correſpondency with his Parliament, and deſired that he would ſend thoſe Lords back to the Parliament who had revolted from them. But the Earl of *Lindſey* the Kings Chamberlaine, and *Lovel* foreſeeing the diſſention might riſe from this Petition, ſuppreſſed this faction at the beginning. Whereupon they were diſpleaſed, and divers men went away from the King. But the King accompanied with twenty thouſand men came to *York*, and commanded them all to return to their houſes.

The Parliament was not ignorant of this buſineſs, they accuſe the ſaid Lords of Treaſon, becauſe they had hindred the Subjects from Petitioning freely for relief of their grievances, not remembring what example they had given by refuſing the Petitions of the men of *Kent* and *Somerſetſhire*, and not only ſo, but had ſeverely puniſhed them for offering their Petitions.

Then they raiſed an Army of 10000 Foot, and 2000 Horſe, and ſend them towards *York*, hoping they would increaſe by others coming to them:

them: And they borrowed a ſufficient ſumme of Money from the *Londoners*, who ſtrove who ſhould bring moſt of their ſilver and guilt Plate, and whatſoever pretious things they had, hoping of great advantage they ſhould receive by it. But the Kings miſfortune began, when 20000 pounds were detain'd by the Exchange, being publiſhed at *London*, which the Queen had borrowed with the Crown Jewels laid to pawn, this was a mighty ſtop to the Kings proceedings. The Houſes increaſed the more, who (ſome in vain being angry at it) endeavoured to raiſe a great Army. The King alſo, who had with advice made delayes, and ſpun out the time, could no longer wink at theſe preparations for Warre, but by Letters, by Policy, by open Warre, he did preſſe the buſineſſe unceſſantly, and with great impatience. And he politiquely attempts to take *Hull*, having obtain'd the conſent of ſome of the Garriſon. But *Hotham* who commanded the Garriſon, refuſing to let him in, though many Souldiers ran away, yet by a freſh ſupply of the *Scots*, he was diſappointed. Becauſe this ſucceeded not, he turns about to make conditions for peace, and he offered the Houſes to come preſently to them, and to puniſh ſeverely the Authors of diſagreement, ſo they would leave *London* that ſeditious City, and chooſe ſome other place, as *Oxford*, *Wincheſter*, *Cambridge*, *Yorke*, *Briſtoll*, *Nottingham*, for to aſſemble at. But the Houſes would name no other place, leaſt the City of *London* ſhould be diſpleaſed at it, for they had more need of the *Londoners* than of any others. The King, when that would not take, proclaims all men guilty of Treaſon, who ſhould aſſiſt the

Houſes with Money, or any other ſupplies; and he threatens the *Londoners* that if they did it, they ſhould loſe all their priviledges (as they have very great ones.) The Houſes on the other ſide ſet as good a gloſs upon their Cauſe as they were able to do. Mens minds and inclinations were diſtracted by theſe means. The people who are eaſily led by blinde errour, and outward appearances, ſtuck faſt to the Parliaments cauſe. Others who were of a higher rank, by reaſon of their Families, paid Tribute freely, leaſt the Houſes ſhould ſend men to ſtrain on their Shops, under a colour of neceſſity: All the Nobles almoſt held with the King.

The King in the mean while fortifies *Newcaſtle* and *Barwick* with Garriſons of *Engliſh*, wherein doubtleſs he hurt himſelf, and alienated the hearts of the *Scots* from him. For it was agreed upon before to have them kept by the *Scotch* Souldiers, and not by the *Engliſh*. But when help came from other parts, and the *Scots* were undervalued, they ſtudied to advantage themſelves only, and though by holding forth Peace, he had won many mens hearts, yet being driven by deſpair, he attempts by force to gain *Hull*, which he could not do by Policy. Firſt he poſſeſſed himſelf of their Fals of Waters, and then of their publick Wayes, that the Townſmen might want neceſſaries, but by their Courage and Valour he loſt his labour. The Houſes now Proclaimed open Warres; and they made the Earl of *Eſſex* Generall of the Foot, *Bedford* of the Horſe. The King makes the Earl of *Cumberland*, a very Nobleman, and faithful to his Soveraign, Generall of his Horſe, and in the

mean time ſet forth his Declarations to the world, and requiring *Hull* to be delivered up to him, that he might puniſh the inſolence of the Governour, but nothing prevailed. But that Warre Proclaimed might not want its ſolemnities, the King ſet up his Standard firſt at *Nottingham*. But when he ſaw a ſmaller concourſe of men than he believed would have been, he again turns about to make conditions. He ſent Meſſengers to the Houſes to excuſe the fact, and to deſire Articles of Peace. But the Houſes, who knew that this proceeded more from his neceſſity than love, made uſe of all advantages, cauſing the Kings Commiſſioners to be brought as Delinquents before the Parliament, overthrowing by this means the Law of Nations.

Then they ſend to the King that unleſs he came ſpeedily to *London*, and ſent away thoſe Nobles to the Parliament that were fled from them, that they might be tried for their Lives, and their Eſtates might be confiſcate to maintain their Army, they would never lay down their Arms. A very hard condition, and no wayes to be anſwered but by the ſword. Some there were that counſelled the King to yield to this, but he had yet courage remaining. After ſo many great preambles, at length Warre is denounced.

But we ſhall pull in our ſails, unfolding the cauſes of theſe diſſentions briefly and ſuccinctly as we reſolved at firſt, and ſo haſten to a concluſion, leaſt entring afreſh into a large field, we ſhould tire both our ſelves and the Reader. Pardon therefore this long digreſſion, and I ſhall proceed.

It was now come to open Warre, and the Victory was doubtfull, ſometimes falling on

this ſide, ſometimes on that, with no ſmall loſs of blood on both ſides. All the particulars are ſet down at large in Books written to this purpoſe, whither I remit the Reader that deſires further knowledge of it.

At that time Prince *Charles* fled from *Scilly* to *Jerſey*, in order to his going into *France*, to his Mother.

Eſſex was Generall of the Parliament Forces, *Fairfax* he ſucceeded in his place. Divers Battells were fought here and there, many Towns vanquiſhed: For the greateſt part the King had the worſt of it, who was afterwards alſo beſieged at *Oxford* by *Fairfax*, and was conſtrained to fly away in a diſguiſed habite, and he came to the *Scots* that were at *Newarke*, hoping to be received with great humanity by ſuch good Subjects as they boaſted themſelves to be.

The Parliament being informed that the King was fled to the *Scots*, ordered that the King ſhould be kept at *Southwell*, and *Aſhburnham* who had eſcaped with the King ſhould be ſent to *London*, both which were diſobeyed, they letting *Aſhburnham* eſcape, and carried the King into the North to *New-caſtle*, alledging that he was as well King of *Scotland* as *England*, and therefore they had a Right in diſpoſing him; but at laſt it was agreed, by the Commiſſioners of the Parliament, and ſome of the chief Commanders of the *Scots* Army, that for the ſumme of two hundred thouſand Pounds to be preſently payed, they would deliver the King and ſome Garriſons that they had in poſſeſſion, to the *Engliſh*.

But when both Fortune and fidelity failed, and there was no care taken for him in his affliction.

They

They when they could not be good, would not be bad, and to keep their hands clear, they delivered the King to the *Engliſh*, under thoſe conditions, and (as they ſay) that no violence ſhould be offered to his Majeſty.

The *Engliſh* being now Maſters of their deſires, carry the King to *Holmbey* Caſtle, from thence to *Hampton* Court, whither he had fled before for Refuge, now a Priſon. Which place ſeeming not ſafe enough for him, he went away to the Iſle of *Wight*, to be guarded by the Waters, and Colonel *Hammon*: uſing a crafty excuſe, for a certain Letter was left on the Table, whereby the King was advertiſed, that there were ſome that laid waite for his life, whereby he was frighted, and fled to a ſafe place in the Iſle of *Wight*.

The people, though before they were enraged againſt the King, now pitying his caſe, and ſeeing their errours, reſolved to plead his Cauſe: They offer their humble Petitions to the Houſes, that they would not refuſe to condeſcend to make peace with the King, and they prevailed ſo farre, that at laſt the buſineſs came to a Treaty, with a great deal of ſeeming ſatisfaction on both ſides, with great applauſe, both of the King, the Houſes, and the People; but afterward there was an humble Petition exhibited to the Parliament, wherein ſome deſired that the King might be tryed by the Laws and Juſtice, and all further Treaties with him to be laid aſide; to which they denied to give an Anſwer.

The Army and ſome of the Parliament not being ſatisfied, they march partly toward *Newport*, to the King, who now was a Priſoner at large,

large, and conveyed him into *Hurſt* Caſtle; Then marching toward *London* again, they poſſeſſed themſelves of the City, and caſt ſome of the Houſes into Priſon, whilſt the reſt who foreſaw this Tempeſt, ſaved themſelves by flight. Here we may ſee an example of Gods judgement, for they that before had ill treated their Maſter, are now compelled to ſuffer.

All that conſented to the *non*-addreſſes, are reſtored to their Honours and Places. Then the King, in the year 1648. was taken as a Priſoner of Warre, and carried to *Windſor*. The remainder of the Parliament, with others, erect a new and unheard-of Tribunal, to take cognizance of the Kings caſe. Judges were choſen, whoſe Names are generally known.

This was done in the year 1648. in *January*. The King was brought before the High-Court of Juſtice, and was accuſed of theſe Crimes:

That he gave the cauſe of the cruell bloodſhed in England *and* Ireland.

That he had born Armes againſt the Parliament.

That he had given Commiſſions to his Sonne and others to wage Warre, that he might exalt his own Authority, with the high detriment of the Common-wealth, whence they concluded, that he was guilty of Treaſon, and ſo he was a Traitor, a Tyrant, and an Enemy to the Common-wealth.

The King ſmiled at all theſe things, and gave no anſwer: being further urged, he refuſed to give any anſwer.

Whereupon they proceed to Sentence, *That he was fallen from all his Dignities, was guilty of High Treaſon, and therefore was to loſe his Head*

for

for being a Tyrant, a Robber, and an Enemy to the Common-wealth. Some making a great ſhout.

The Sentence given, they proceed to execution, though the *Holland* Embaſſadours, *Adrian Paw*, and *Albertus Joachimus*, with the *Scots*, did their beſt to hinder the proceedings. He obtained leave for Dr *Juxon* Biſhop of *London*, and two of his Children to be with him, theſe for his bodies, him for the comfort of his ſoul. At length he ſent away his Children with Gifts and Tears: only he kept the Miniſter by him, to the laſt moment of his life. The Prince *Palatine* and the Duke of *Richmond* came to bid the King their laſt farewell, but the King refuſed it, leaſt they ſhould interrupt the preſent joyes of his ſoul with new lamenting. At laſt the 30 day of *January* 1648 was appointed for his execution: And the King aſcended the Scaffold erected before his Banqueting-houſe; from whence he made his laſt Speech to the People there preſent, and when as now he had ſufficiently profeſſed his Innocency, he then prepared himſelf for death, and laying his neck on the Block, his Head was cut off by a diſguiſed Executioner, and he changed a troubleſome life for a quiet death: his body was put in a Coffin covered with black Velvet, and from thence to his Houſe at St. *Jame's*, where his body was put in a Coffin of Lead, laid there to be ſeen by the people. On Wedneſday the 7th of *Feb.* his Corpſes was delivered to two of his ſervants to be buried at *Windſor*; whether the next day, The Duke of *Richmond*, the Marqueſs of *Hartford*, the Earls of *Lindſey* and *Southampton*, together with Dr. *Juxon*, and divers others repaired, where with much difficulty they finde a Vault in St. *Georges* Chappell,

pell, where King *Henry* the Eighth was formerly buried: which being prepared, a ſmall piece of Lead, ſome two foote long, and two inches broad was provided; on which was inſcribed;

King CHARLES 1648.

which was ſawdred to the breſt of the Corpſe: all things being in readineſs, the Corpſe was brought to the Vault by the Souldiers of the Garriſon, over which was a black Velvet Hearſe Cloth, which was ſupported by foure Lords, the Biſhop of *London* ſtood weeping by, then was it depoſited in ſilence and ſorrow, the Hearſe Cloth being caſt in after it.

FINIS.

Carolus 2d D.G. Rex: Ang: Scot
Franc: & Hib: etc.

CHARLES *the Second, King of Great* Brittanny, France, and Ireland.

CHARLES the First, the Martyr of the Laws and people, thus inhumanely murdered by a Crew of the meaneſt of his Subjects, the Right to the Crown and Scepter of *England* deſcended to his Eldeſt Son, *Charles* Prince of *Wales*; but the Fathers Butcherers durſt not admit of the Sons Soveraignty, and therefore having got a ſufficient armed Force in readineſs, ſecured by the Arbitrary power of the Sword, they preſumed to alter the Fundamental Laws of the Nation, and having put to death the Father, diſinherit the Son, by proclaiming that none upon pain of death ſhould either declare for, or aſſiſt his Intereſt.

But ſome Loyal Souls in *England*, willing to expreſs their Affections, though they had not power to act, cauſed under-hand a Proclamation to be Printed, declaring him King of *England*, *Scotland*, *France* and *Ireland*: Further they could not proceed by reaſon of the Force incumbent on them. But in *Ireland* the Duke of *Ormond*, and Lord *Inchequeen* making Truce with the *Quondam* Rebels, drew all that Kingdom to his Majeſties Allegiance (except the Cities of *Dublin* and *London-derry*) whom they ſolemnly proclaimed, and earneſtly invited over.

His Majeſty was at the time of his Bleſſed Fathers Murder, with his Siſter, the Princeſs Royal at the *Hague*, but ſhortly after he took his jour-

ney into *France*, hoping there to get aid for Revenge of that cruel Regicide; but finding a reception colder than his hopes, he came into the Isle of *Jersey*, which still held out for him, whither he was accompanied with his Brother the Duke of *York*, and several Nobles which waited upon his deplorable Fortunes: Being here, he summoned *Guernsey*, which the pretended Parliament had wholly subjected, except *Cornet* Castle, but in vain: Yet he put the Rebels into some fear, that he had a design to seize upon *Dartmouth*, or some other Port in the West, which they therefore endeavoured to secure.

Hither, to make him yet more unfortunate, was the News brought him of the total Overthrow of the Duke of *Ormond* in *Ireland*, to which, Sir *Robert Stuarts*, and Col. *Mervins* Defeat before *London-derry*, succeeding, and *Cromwel* with a mighty Army soon after, 'twas easily to be imagined that Kingdom was irrecoverably lost.

Some hopes (though but small) there were yet of the *Scots*, who though they had sold their King to the Rebel *English* Independants, yet now protested against his Murder, and had issued out a Proclamation from their Committee of Estates, declaring *Charles* Prince of *Wales*, Eldest Son of the Late murdered King *Charles* the First, King of *Great Brittaine*, *France* and *Ireland*, &c. Yet they resolved before they would receive him to the Crown, to treat with him upon sundry Articles.

And so many were their Dissentions one amongst the other, what should be their Articles, and whom they should send to carry them, that the King incited by their delayes, and advised by

the

the most Faithful of his Council, Commissioned the Marqueſſe of *Montroſſe*, who had done ſuch gallant things againſt the Rebel-*Scots* in his Fathers dayes, to raiſe what Forces he could, to enter into *Scotland*, and endeavour to re-unite thoſe Loyal Souls who formerly had fought ſo victoriouſly under his Banner.

The Marqueſs according to his Commiſſion, endeavoured to raiſe what Force he could, but found ſmall aſſiſtance afforded him; yet with the inconſiderable Power he had, to wit, four Ships indifferently well armed, but not containing above ſix or ſeven hundred men, and a ſmall Frigot given him by the Queen of *Sweden*, he ſet ſayl from *Hamburgh*. Two of his ſhips were unfortunately loſt in a Storm; with the other three he took poſſeſſion of the Iſle of *Orkney*.

From thence having levied what Force he could, of the rude and unskilful Iſlanders, he croſſed over to the Point of *Cathaues*, the fartheſt North-weſt point of *Scotland*, hoping thoſe people would have joyned with him; but they deſerted their dwellings, and fled to *Edinburgh*, and the States of *Scotlands* Force under the Command of *Straughan* met with *Montroſſe* near *Dunbath* Caſtle, whom, being deſtitute of Horſe, they utterly defeated.

Montroſſe himſelf eſcaped from the Battel, but could not eſcape the Search that was made throughout all the Countrey for him, ſo three daies after he was taken, and ſent with a ſtrong Guard to *David Leſley*, the *Scottiſh* General, and from thence ſent in the moſt ignominious manner imaginable to *Edinburgh*, and there tried by a publick Convention of the States of *Scotland*, who condemned this Illuſtrious and Noble Marquels

to be hanged upon an extraordinary high pair of Gallows for three hours space, and then his body being taken down, his Head, Arms, and Legs to be cut off, & the first to be placed upon the *Tolbooth*, or prison-Gate of *Edinborough*, and the rest on the chief Gates of four Principal Cities; all which, this worthy Marquess suffered, dying a never to be forgotten Martyr to his Prince and Countrey.

The Death of *Montrosse* put some stop to the Proceedings of the Treaty between the King and *Scots*: For the King had entred into a Treaty with the *Scots*, and had received *Propositions* from them by Mr. *Windrum* Laird of *Libberton* to this purpose; 1. *That he should sign the Solemn League and Covenant.* 2. *That he would pass several Acts of their Parliament.* 1. For disclaiming *Hamiltons* Invasion of *England*. 2. For receiving several Acts of the *English*, touching the *Militia*; And, 3. That the *Kings* of *Scotland* should have no negative voyce. Thirdly, *To recall his Commissions to Montross.* Fourthly, *That his Majesty would appoint some place to treat with the Scotch Commissioners.* Fifthly, *That he would put all Papists from about him.* And, Lastly, *Give a speedy Answer to their Desires.*

The King received these Propositions, but would not condescend to recal *Montrosses* Commission. *Breda* is the place appointed to treat, and Mr. *Windram* sent with Answer, That the King would there meet with Commissioners from the State and Kirk of *Scotland*, upon the sixteenth of *March*, 1649. Where accordingly he found ready to attend him, the Earl of *Castles*, the Lords *Lothian*, *Burleigh*, and *Libberton*, and Mr.

Mr. *Smith* for the States, and Mr. *Broady*, *Lawſon*, and *Wood* for the Kirk. Theſe preſented to his Majeſty in behalf of the State and Kirk Propoſitions to this effect;

1. That all who had been excommunicated by the Church, and ſtill continued ſo, ſhould be forbid acceſs to Court.

2. That all Acts of the Parliament of *Scotland*, ſhould be by him Ratified and Approved. That the Solemn League and Covenant, the *Presbyterian* Church-Government, the Directory, Confeſſion, and Catechiſme ſhould be enjoyned in *Scotland*, and uſed and practiſed in his Family.

3. That he would ſign the Solemn League and Covenant, and National Covenant.

4. That he would conſent and agree that all Civil Matters might be determined by ſubſequent Parliaments in *Scotland*, and all Eccleſiaſtical matters by the General Kirk-Aſſembly.

His Majeſty having heard theſe Propoſitions, demanded of the Commiſſioners if they had declared their full Power, and whether they could not recede from ſome of their Propoſitions? They anſwered, they had no power to recede from any.

Long were the Debates and Demurs in this Treaty, but at length his Majeſty conſtrained by the Neceſſities of his Affairs, to conclude the Treaty, by condeſcending to moſt of their deſires, notwithſtanding diſſwaded from it by many of his Friends, who earneſtly preſſed and urged him to remember the *Scots* Perfidiouſneſs to his Father.

The Treaty being ended, the King prepared for his Voyage, and the Committee of Eſtates at

Edinburgh, made great preparations for his Reception. About the middle of *June*, 1650. the King imbarqued at *Scheveling* in *Holland*, and after a violent Storm, and narrow Escape of some Vessels belonging to *English* Rebels, arrived safely at the *Spey*, in the North of *Scotland*, whither some Lords were sent to receive him, and accompany him to *Edinburgh*.

He was received all along the Countrey with General Joy, receiving Presents from all the Towns as he came along; the Town of *Aberdeen* presented him 1500 *l.* But the Committee of Estates and Kirk, to hinder such Presents, enjoyned those that had Money to give, to bring it into the publick Treasury: And though the King had consented to most of their Desires at *Breda*, yet they sent him farther Conditions to sign at *Dundee*, which, being in their hands, he was forced to assent to.

Being arrived at *Edinburgh*, he was received by the Committee of Estates and Kirk with infinite Expressions of Service and Affection, and with joyful Acclamations of the people; and on the 15th. of *July*, 1650. was again solemnly proclaimed at *Edinburgh* Cross with much State and Magnificence.

Great care in the mean time had been taken by the chief of the *Scots*, for the raising of an Army to oppose the *English* Rebels, who, for their receiving of the King, threatned to invade them; every fourth man in the Kingdom was ordered to be trained, and six thousand Horse, and sixteen thousand Foot to be immediatly raised. The Earl of *Leven* is made General of the Foot, *Holborne* Major General, *David Leshley* Lieut. General of the

the Horſe, and *Montgomery* Major General; the place of *Generaliſſimo* was reſerved for the King, but he came not into the Army.

This Army advanced againſt *Cromwel*, who with a potent *Engliſh* Army, had invaded *Scotland*; at *Muſcleborough*, Major General *Montgomery* with a ſmall Party fell into the *Engliſh* Quarters, but was worſted, and ſo the two Armies moved at a diſtance one from the other, till they came to *Dunbar*, where the *Scots* gaining the Paſs, bragg'd they had got the *Engliſh* in a Pound. But their confidence and ſecurity was the cauſe of their Overthrow; for they were here utterly routed and diſperſed.

This loſs ſomwhat abated the Pride of the *Scotch* Kirk, whoſe Army this was; yet ſo imperious they were in regulating his Majeſties Houſhold Affairs, *&c.* that not able to comport their Inſolence, he fled, accompanied only with four Horſe, into the North of *Scotland*, where the Marqueſs of *Huntly*, the Earles of *Seaforth*, and *Athol*, the Lords *Ogilby* and *Newburgh* were ready to apppear for him.

The States were extreamly diſcontented at the Kings leaving them; *Montgomery* is poſted after him with a Party of Horſe, he ſurrounds the Lord *Dedups* houſe, where the King was, parleys with him, and at length, upon the granting of ſeveral Propoſitions to him, perſwades him to return to St. *Johnſtons*.

Upon the Kings Return, *Huntley's* Party were admitted into Offices, and a General Aſſembly ſummoned at St. *Johnſtons*, but the Committee of the Kirk would have it held at *Sterling*; but at length comply. The Aſſembly meets, all Parties

ſeem agreed; ſeveral Lords in diſfavour of the Kirk, are admitted to Commands in the Army, and Places in Parliament; *Hamilton*, *Lauderdale*, *Leith*, *Beuchein*, *Dedup*, and *Craford*, with ſeveral others received into Favour.

This year his Majeſty loſt a Siſter and a Brother in law, the firſt, the Virtuous Princeſs *Elizabeth*, ſecond Daughter to the Late King, and the ſecond, the Illuſtrious Prince of *Orange*, who had ever been a good and ſtedfaſt Friend to his Majeſty.

The General Aſſembly which was met at St. *Johnſtons*, firſt ordered the ſolemnization of the Kings Coronation, which was performed at *Scone* (the uſual place for Coronation of the Kings of *Scotland*) on the firſt day of *January*, 165$\frac{1}{2}$ with all accuſtomed and befitting Ceremonies.

After which Solemnity performed, the King had a Guard of the Nobility and Gentry to attend him, and began to make all ſpeed poſſible, for the raiſing another Army, which himſelf reſolves to command in Chief, and makes *Hamilton* his Lieut. General of the Army, and *Middleton* Lieut. General of the Horſe.

Neceſſity required the compleating the Levies; for the *Engliſh* had reduced all on the other ſide of *Fife*, even to *Edinburgh* Caſtle it ſelf; ſo all haſt poſſible was made, not only in that, but in finiſhing the Fortifications of *Sterling*, which his Majeſty in perſon went often to view, intending it for the chief place of his Reſidence; and accordingly, on the 29th. of *May*, being his birth-day, removed thither.

In the mean time a Plot was diſcovered againſt the Juncta of Rebels ruling in *England*, ſome

Pre-

Presbyterians, whether only to assist their Brethren of *Scotland*, or out of some small Affection to his Majesty, endeavoured here to raise Armes, but being discovered, *Love*, a Minister, and *Gibbons*, a Captain, lost their heads upon *Tower-hill*.

His Majesties Army now lay encamped at *Terwood* near *Sterling*, which *Cromwel* several times faced, but could not draw from their Trenches: he therefore on a sudden passes over some Forces cross the *Fife*, who there encounter, and rout Sr. *John Brown*, who was sent with four thousand to oppose them; shortly after, *Cromwel* transports over the rest of his Forces, and marches up to St. *Johnstons*.

His Majesty seeing the *English* Army advanced so far Northward, thought it in vain to attempt the forcing them back, but by advice of his Council, advances into *England*, hoping there to find help. Many disliked this Design of his Majesty; nor did Duke *Hamilton* very well approve it, as appears by some words in his Letter to Mr. *Crofts*.

We are now laughing (saies he) *at the Ridiculousness of our present state; We have quit* Scotland, *being scarce able to maintain it, and yet we grasp at all, and nothing but all will satisfie us, or to lose all: I confess I cannot tell whether our hopes or our fears be the greatest; but we have one stout Argument*, Despair; *for we must either stoutly fight or die; all the Rogues have left us, I shall not say whether out of fear, or disloyalty; but all now with his Majesty, are such as will not dispute his Commands.*

But to proceed, *July* 31. 1651. His Majesties Army advanced from *Torwood* near *Sterling*, marching directly towards *England*, which he entred six daies after, by way of *Carliste*. *Cromwel* hearing

hearing of his design, immediatly recrosses the *Frith*, and sends *Lambert* with a swift Party of Horse to fall into the Kings Rear, and hinder his March, Major General *Harrison* with 3000 horse and Dragoons, waits to attacque him in the Front; all *England* are forced to levy Forces to oppose him; in some Counties, one Regiment, in others, two, and in some more, and all are forbid to assist, upon penalty of being guilty of High Treason against the *RUMP*, so that few or none came in to the Kings Assistance, but only the Lord *Howard* of *Estrich* his Son.

The King contrary to expectation, being come into *Lancashire*, strikes off at *Warrington*, *Lambert* being got before him, and joyned with *Harrison*, endeavoured to stop his Majesties passage at *Warrington*-Bridge, but were forced to retreat, and the King having passed over his Army, steered his course directly towards *Worcester*, in his way summoning *Shrewsbury*, but in vain.

Being come to *Worcester*, he enters that City, resolving there to rest his wearied Army, and expect the dire Influences of that Cloud which gathered over him from all parts of *England*, whilst no body endeavoured to assist him, but the Earl of *Derby*, who having raised some few Forces in *Derbyshire*, was the 25th. of *August*, three dayes after the Kings arrival at *Worcester*, defeated at *Wiggan*, by Col. *Lilburne*.

On the 28th. of *August*, began the first bickering, where *Lambert* gained the Bridge at *Upton*, and forced *Massey* to a Retreat; afterwards the Rebels made their approaches close about the City, several skirmishes there were; but the great and bloudy battel was fought on the third of *September*

tember, (a day propitious to *Cromwel*) where though his Majesties Army fought most gallantly, from Morning till night, yet over powred by numbers, they were totally routed, and his Majesty for the preservation of his Person, forced to flee out at St. *Martins* Gate.

Yet a miraculous Providence it was, that his Majesty should escape the hands of those bloud-sucking Regicides, who made search every where for him; but God conducted him to the Forrest of *Boscobel*, where he was for some time secured by the Faith of the *Penderels*, persons of but small Estates, and therefore likelier to be corrupted, till afterwards he was privately conveyed to *Brighthemsted* in *Sussex*, and thence transported into *France*.

Many were the Prisoners taken in this unfortunate Day, and in the pursuit; the Chief were the Earls of *Derby*, *Cleaveland*, *Shrewsbury*, *Lauderdale*, *Carnwarth* and *Kelly*. The Lords *Wentworth*, and *Synclare*, Sir *John Packington*, the Major Generals *Massey*, *Montgomery* and *Piscotty*, Mr. *Richard Fanshaw* Secretary to his Majesty. Several Persons of note were likewise slain, among whom the thrice valliant Duke *Hamilton*.

His Majesty after this day having recovered *France*, was there received with Joy for his miraculous escape, though there was now no hopes left, any waies but by the wonderful hand of God, to recover his lost Dominions: the Wars with *Spain* not giving the *French* King leave to assist him.

Here therefore he passes away his tedious time for some years, imploying alwaies his utmost endeavours to reconcile these differences which then

then began to grow high between the King and Princes of the Bloud, which were in the end partly by his mediation composed.

But at length *Oliver Cromwel*, who had for a long time been General of that *Junto*'s Army which stiled themselves a Parliament, having now no more action to do for them abroad, turns them out of their power, and under the name and title of a Protector, usurps to himself the Supream Authority over these three Nations, and as if his power were lawful, treats and makes peace and war at pleasure with forreign Nations.

The first League that he made, was with the *Hollanders*, who whilst they had maintained war against the Rebel-Junto, the King had solliciied to own his Cause, but to no purpose. Next a League is proposed between him and *France*, by the Cardinal, which *Cromwel* listens to, because of an intended design upon *Spain*, but will consent to on no other terms, than the Banishment of our King, his Brothers, the Dukes of *York* and *Glocester*, and all his faithful Subjects and Adherents from *France*.

Interest makes that King consent to the Banishment of his Kindred; and the King of *England* perceiving his Cozens Inclinations to conclude the Treaty with *Cromwel*, thought it more generous, to leave that Kingdom of his own accord, than to be driven forth of it; and therefore having taken his leave of the *French* King, accompanied with his Cozen Prince *Rupert*, he took his Journey towards *Germany*, where the Earl of *Rochester* had long been soliciting the favour and assistance of the Electoral Princes in his behalf.

As for the Dukes of *York* and *Glocester*, they stayed

ſtayed yet for ſome time in *France*, the one by reaſon of his command, being Lieut. General of the *French* Army, the other with his Mother the Queen, till ſuch time as ſhortly after his Majeſty underſtanding that the Queen had an intention to place him in a Colledge of *Jeſuits*, to be inſtructed in the *Romiſh* Religion, ſent for him to attend him at the *Spaw*.

His Majeſty in his Journey from *France*, came firſt to *Chaſtillon*, a Caſtle belonging to the Prince of *Conde*, whither he was accompanied by his Brother the Duke of *York*, and his Cozens, Prince *Rupert* and *Edward Palatines*; here Pr. *Edward* and the Duke of *York* left him, the one going to *Bourbon*, the other returning to the Army. But his Majeſty and Prince *Rupert* continued their Journey together till the Prince parted from him to go viſit his Brother *Frederick* at *Heidelburgh*, his Majeſty continuing his Journey through *Cambray* and *Leige* to the *Spaw*.

Whilſt this Royal Unfortunate thus wandred up and down the world, *Cromwel* tyrannized over his faithful Subjects at home; a Plot is diſcovered to take away their Lives, and Mr. *John Gerrard* is beheaded at Tower-hill, and Mr. *Peter Vowel* hanged at *Charing-Croſs*, by the power of an arbitrary High Court of Juſtice.

Scotland was not as yet fully ſubjected to Rebellion, the Lords, *Seaforth*, *Æthol*, *Glencarn*, *Kenmore* and *Glengary*, who had moſt of them been formerly followers of the noble Marqueſs of *Montroſs*, by Commiſſions from the Earl of *Glencarn*, had levied ſeveral ſmall Parties in their Territories, which if joyned, would have made a conſiderable Army, beſides the help which they expected

pected *Middleton* should bring them out of the *Low-Countries*, but whilst they endeavoured to joyn, *Glencarne* was met with by Col. *Morgan*, and defeated, himself hardly escaping.

Yet the rest were not wholly discouraged, having yet hopes of those supplies they expected from *Middleton*, who at length arrived, but brought *Monroe* with him, to be his Lieut. General, which bred great difference; *Glencarne* was displeased that he who had been the chief Instrument in raising this Army, should now be forced to truckle under others; *Monroe* will not yield to him, they fight, *Monroe* is worsted, yet the dissention continues: For *Middleton* pretends he could not change *Monroes* Commission, *Glencarn* scorns to be under him; but chuses rather to desert the Army with five hundred Horse, and compounds with General *Monk*.

Yet *Middleton* pursues his Business and Commission, and had gathered a pretty formidable power, when General *Monk* forcing him to an Engagement at *Longherry*, totally routed him, scattered his Party, and had almost taken himself Prisoner, but he escaping, returned into *Holland*.

This ill Success had his Majesties Affairs every where, whilst himself continued still at the *Spaw*, accompanied with his Sister the Royal Princess of *Orange*, courted by all the adjacent Grandees, till such time as they went from thence to *Collen*; where they were received with all possible demonstrations of Joy and Affection, the great Guns discharging at their entrance, and the Deputies of the City coming out to meet them in solemn manner, and conducting them in pomp to the Palace provided for them by the chief Magistrate of

the

the City, who not long after entertained them at a Banquet, where he expressed in many Ceremonious Complements the resentment they had of his Majesties condition, and the great honour he did them in coming to visit their City.

After some short stay at *Collen*, the King and Princess Royal were invited by the Duke of *Newburgh* to his Palace at *Dunsel Dorpe*, where they were for many dayes most sumptuously entertained, till the Princess took leave of her Brother, who accompanied her in the way towards *Holland* as far as *Redinguen*, from whence he returned back to *Collen*.

Mean while more of his Majesties faithful Subjects were made the subjects of *Cromwels* tyranny, for endeavouring the restoration of their lawful Prince; a general Rising was designed all over *England*, but by the treachery of some concerned, betraying it to *Cromwel*, none durst appear in Arms, except only some Gentry about *Salisbury*, who were easily defeated, their Captains, *Penruddock*, *Grove* and *Jones* taken, and the two first executed at *Exeter*, besides many others, who either suffered death, or were transported to become slaves in the *West-Indies*.

The Duke of *Glocester* coming out of *France*, touch'd at the *Hague*, where he found his sister the P^ss^ Royal, newly returned from her visit of the K. her Brother. Some time the Duke stayed at the *Hague*, and at length accompanied with his sister, went to his Majesty to *Colen*, where they stayed till after the Fair at *Frankford*, whither went these Royal Princes, accompanied with the Duke of *Ormond*, the Earl of *Norwich*, the Lord *Newburgh*, and several Ladies and Persons of Quality, being

received

received by all the Grandees whose Palaces were adjacent to those Parts, they past by with all imaginable respect and honour: While his Majesty was at *Franckford*, the Queen of *Sweden* (who had some time before resigned her Crown to her Kinsman *Carolus Gustavus*) being to pass that way, his Majesty had an Interview, and near two hours discourse with her at *Conningstein*, a small Village not far distant from *Franckford*: after a short stay at *Franckford*, his Majesty returned to *Collen*, where not long after he received the Invitation of the Count of *Fuensaldagne*, in behalf of the King of *Spain* his Master, that his Majesty would be pleased to come and reside within his Dominions of *Flanders*; which his Majesty graciously condescended to do.

The Cause of this Invitation proceeded from the Wars which were lately broke forth between the *English* and the *Spanish*, both on this side, and beyond the *Line*, and by reason of the Peace concluded with *France*, who had now given warning to the Duke of *York*, to depart the *French* Dominions, which he soon did, and with his whole Train came to *Bruges*, where his Majesty had a most magnificent Entertainment appointed for him.

Here his Majesty drew into Companies, and formed into a pretty considerable Army, those *English*, *Scots* and *Irish*, who for his sake had been banished, and driven from their Native Countrey, hoping that some blessed opportunity would present, that he might get the upper hand of those Murderers, who had driven him from his Right: These therefore he quartered near the Sea-side, to be ready to be transported upon all occasions; but

but were afterwards (since there was no apparent hopes his Majesty could make any successful use of them) employed in the Service of the King of *Spain*, who did indeed want men to counterpoyze those Six thousand *English* Foot *Cromwel* had sent over for the Service of the King of *France*.

These therefore being joyned with *Don John D' Austria*, marched to the Relief of *Dunkirk*, then beleaguered by the Joynt Forces of *England* and *France*; near *Fuerves* the two Armies encountred; but notwithstanding all endeavours possible, the *English* and *French* got the day, and *Don John*'s Army was utterly defeated, and *Dunkirk* suddenly after surrendred, and is still, God be thanked, in possession of the *English*.

Yet *Cromwel* is not content with these external Glories, except he dye the Scaffolds in innocent Blood; he had not yet sacrificed enough of his Majesties faithful Subjects to his Ambition; another Plot is found out, *Hul* and *London* to be both secured in a day: The Reverend Dr. *Hewit*, Sr. *Henry Slingsby*, the now Lord *Mordant*, Col. *Ashton*, Capt. *Henry Mallory*, Mr. *Woodcock*, *John Bettely*, *Edmond Stacy*, *Henry Fryer*, *John Sunnyr*, and *Oliver Allen* are apprehended, and accused to be the chief Plotters of this Design. Dr. *Hewit* and Sr. *Henry Slingsby* being tried before the High Court of Justice (as it was called) and refusing to plead, were condemned, and both beheaded on *Tower-hill*, the rest were all condemned, but none executed, but *Ashton*, *Stacy*, and *Bettely*, who were hanged, drawn, and quartered in several places of *London*.

But long enough had his most Sacred Majesty and his faithful Subjects suffered unjustly, and

therefore God was pleased to give them a Sign to let them know that their Redemption drew nigh, by taking away that greatest Oppoſer of his Majesties Right, *Oliver Cromwel*, who on that day in which he had ſucceſsfully fought thoſe two great Battels at *Dunbar* and *Worceſter*, *viz.* on the third of *September*, 1658. was taken out of this world, to give an account for all the bloud his ambition or Tyranny had ſhed.

Yet ſo cunningly had he plaied his Game, and with ſo great a Calm was his Son received to be Protector, that many men thought the Succeſſion would have continued in that Uſurpers Line, but it pleaſed God to raiſe up *Lambert*, a perſon who had been diſgraced by *Oliver Cromwel*, and whoſe Ambitious Spirit prompted him to that Greatneſs the other enjoyed, to be an Inſtrument, though againſt his will, for the reſtoration of his Bleſſed Majeſty: For by degrees and Inſinuations he wrought the other Officers of the Army, to overthrow *Richard*, and degrade him from his Protectorſhip; which done, they ſet up again that Old *Rump* of a Parliament, which *Oliver* had in 1653. diſbanded.

Theſe being ſate, thoſe Members of Parliament who had been ſecluded by the force of the Army, in 1648. demanded entrance, and free liberty to Sit and Vote, but were denied; whereupon they, with ſeveral others of the Nobility and Gentry, conſpired together, reſolving to aſſert their Liberty with their Bloud, and no longer be enſlaved to Arbitrary and unlawful Tyranny and Uſurpation: But their Counſels in moſt Counties were betrayed and prevented, only Sr. *George Booth*, and Sir *Thomas Middleton* in *Cheſhire* and *Flintſhire*, raiſed

ed a pretty considerable Force, but were soon dis-pated by that power which was sent by the *Par-* under the command of *Lambert*, who at his return, puff'd up with his Victory, turn'd out those who had given him his Commission, hoping to raise himself to the same height that *Oliver* had done.

In the mean time, both his Majesty and the Duke of *York* were retired privately from *Brudges*, which made many suspect that they were come over into *England*; but the Duke of *York* was come only to *Calice*, there to wait the success of things; and his Majesty was privately gone to *Bayonne*, upon the Invitation of the two Ministers of State, *Don Lewis de Haro*, and Cardinal *Mazarine*, who were treating a Peace between the two potent Crowns of *France* and *Spain*, from which Agreement his Majesty had some hopes of furtherance to his Restoration.

The King was accompanied in his Journey by the Duke of *Ormond*, the Lord *Digby*, and Mr. *Seale*; being come near the end of his Journey, he was met by *Don Lewis de Haro*, accompanied with a most gallant Train, and by him received with all imaginable respect; for no sooner did he espy the King afar off, but lighting off his Horse, though the place was very dirty, he came afoot to the Kings Horse side, and kneeling down, humbly kissed his Stirrop.

Many Overtures and Propositions passed between his Majesty and *Don Lewis de Haro*, touching what Aid and Assistance might be granted him by his Catholick Majesty, for the regaining of his Rights and Kingdoms: The King endeavouring by all means possible to promote the

Treaty and Match between the King of *France*, and *Spanish Infanta*, as well for his own particular Interest, as the General Good of Christendom.

Having some time been treated here, he returned back again through *France*, being accompanied part of the way by *Don Lewis de Haro*, and repasting the rest privately by Post, till he came to *Charinton*, near *Paris*, where the Queen-Mother was; where he stayed some few dayes, and so returned to *Brussels*.

But to return again to *England*, *Lambert* and the rest of the Army-Officers having turned out the *Rump* (for so had the people in scorn and disgrace termed the *Junto*, who stiled themselves a Parliament) could not agree amongst themselves, who should be Protector, therefore to amaze the people, they set up a Pageant-*Committee of safety*, who promise to invent some new way of Fetters, to manacle and enslave the People.

But General *Monk* in *Scotland* was inwardly vexed at these several sorts of Tyrannies imposed upon the people, and therefore he gathers together his Army, resolving to set free his Countrey; but knowing, that should he absolutely declare for the King, as the only Restorer of his Countrey, he should oblige both Parties against him, he seems to comply with the *Rump*, who encouraged by him, and the Souldiers in *Ireland*, get possession of *Portsmouth*, and soon after the *Committee of Safety* being distracted, know not what to do, but submit themselves to the *Rump*, who again seat themselves; which *Lamberts* Army hearing of, desert him, and *Monk* is by them Ordered to march with his Army up to *London*, which he does, accompanied all the way by the Gentry and

Com-

Commonalty for a *Free Parliament.*

The City likewise send him their Commissioners, and protest, not to pay any Money to this pretended, usurping power, in which they are accordingly resolute; whereupon General *Monk* is commanded to march into the City, pull down their Posts and Gates, and imprison several of their Common-Council-men, which he performs, but afterwards finding the time ripe for the Delivery of his Countrey from Slavery, complied with the City, and taking up his Lodgings at *Drapers-Hall*, summons the Secluded Members, to come and take their Seats in the House; who after having made several wholsom Laws and Votes, dissolved themselves, and divolved the power into a Council of State, for the calling of a *Free Parliament* to sit by the first of *May*, 1660.

During this Interval, *Lambert* having escaped out of the Tower, the *Rump* began some of them to indulge their Enemy, and he to endeavour to disturb the publick Peace, and begin a fresh War, but before he could come to any great head, he was by Sr. *Richard Ingoldsby* taken, and again brought up Prisoner.

On the first of *May*, the Parliament met, the House of Lords taking their Seats in the Lords House, and the Commons in their own, when Sr. *John Greenvile* presented both Houses with Letters & a Declaration from his Majesty, expressing his good affection to his people, and the great desire he had to see *England* flourish in peace and happiness: These Letters were received with infinite Joy, and both Houses Voted that an Answer should be returned to his Majesties most Gracious Letters, That Sr. *John Greenvile* should

have

have the Thanks of both Houses; besides, the House of Commons to express their acceptation of such welcom News from his Majesty, Voted him five hundred Pound, to buy him a Jewel. His Majesty likewise writ a Letter to General *Monk* and the City, which was received with that Joy and respect became a faithful Subject.

On the 8 of *May* following, the King was proclaimed in the City of *London* with a Joy beyond Expression, the Nobility and Gentry in their Coaches, and on horseback, expressing by the brandishing of their Swords and waving their hats, the contentment they had to see so happy a day, wherein our King was restored to his Rights, and we to our Liberties.

Immediatly Commissioners were dispatched from the House of Lords and Commons, and City of *London*, to desire the King with all speed to return to the Exercise of his Kingly Power, who met the King at *Breda*, carrying great Presents of Money to his Majesty, and his Brothers, the Dukes of *York* and *Glocester* for their Transportation.

On the 29th. of *May*, the Kings Birth-day, he was conducted into *London* with that State and Magnificence, which cannot but be fresh in every mans Memory.

Thus have we made a compendious Story of the Misfortunes of this Royal Prince till his Restoration: May he now Live and Reign long and prosperously, that Future times may have Subject enough to relate his Glorious, and more Fortunate Actions.

FINIS.